

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

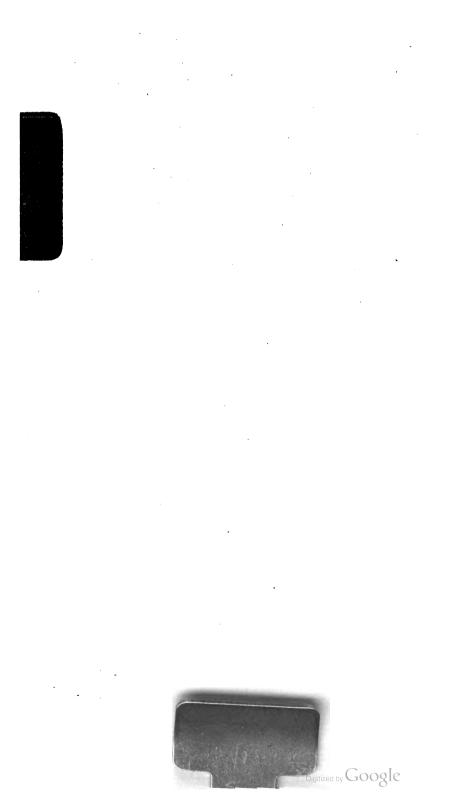
We also ask that you:

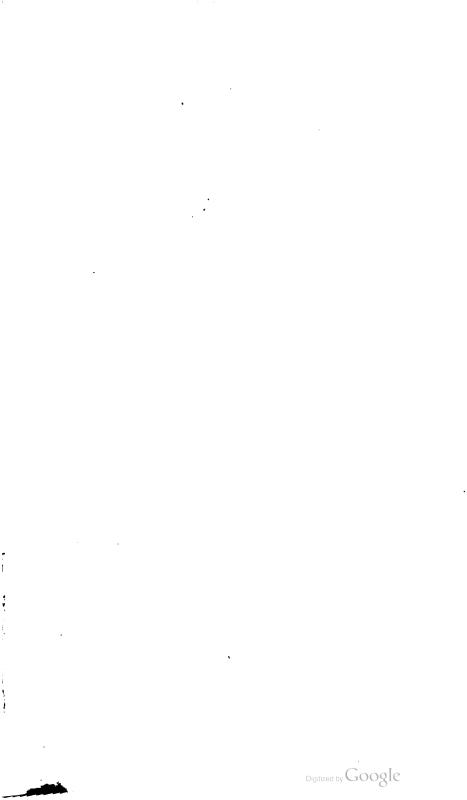
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + Keep it legal Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

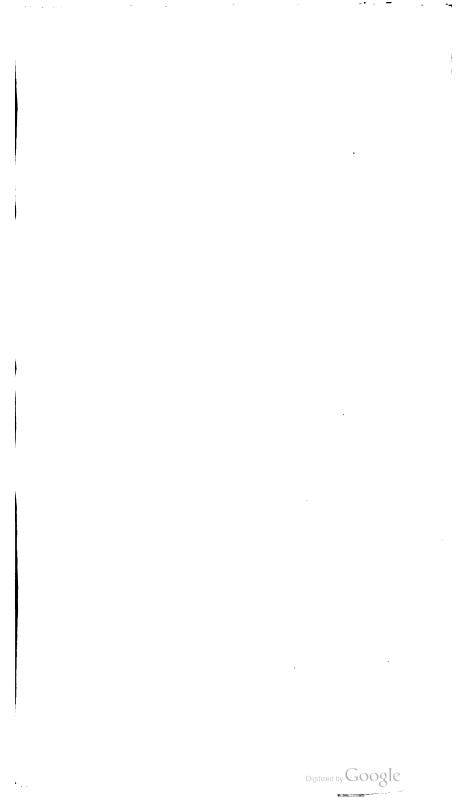


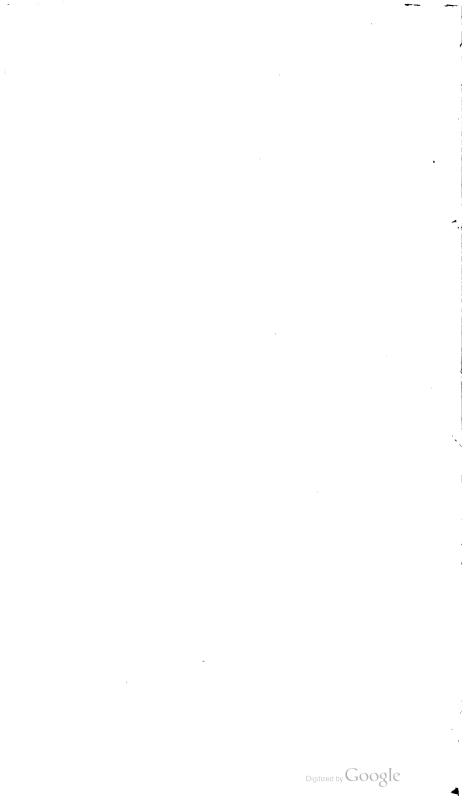












Samuel Johnson an English Divine was boun in Warwicks hire in 1649. He was educated at It Pauls School, & neat at Frinity College, Cambridge, which he left without a Obequee. The only ecclesionatical preferment he ever obtained was the small Rectory of covingham in Efsea, where he did not reside, but setted in London, as a place more suited to his disposition for polities, which brought him acquainted with lord william Riefsell, who made him this Clicplain . In 1682 he printed a book entitled "Julian, the apostate " for which he was prosecuted in the I ding's Bench, and fined five hundred marks. after this be went on printing tracts against poperty and arbitrary power; especially in the reign of James II, for one of which "An address to the dring " he was de griceded condemned to the pillory, to pay a fine and to be publicly whipped. after the Revolution, his dentary " his sentence was reversed by Parliament, and he was offered the Deanery of Surham which be refused, as an unequal reward for his services. He wanted a Bishopvie, for which he was ill-qualified, and therefore a pennion was granted him instead of it, and another for this son. He died in 1703. His works were published in 1 Vol. Jolio, in 1760. (Biog: Brit.) (Walthing's Biographical Dictionary.)

Digitized by GO

R. 534.083 342(42)14211 Johday 134.894 259

).

HISTORY and DEFENCE

0 🖡

MAGNA CHARTA.

The Manner of its being obtained from

KING JOHN,

With its Preservation and Final Establishment in the Succeeding Reigns;

WITH AN

INTRODUCTORY DISCOURSE,

CONTAINING

A flort Account of the Rife and Progrefs of National Freedom, from the Invation of *Cafar* to the prefent Times.

Alfo the LIBERTIES which are confirmed by the

BILL OF RIGHTS, &c. To which is added,

AN ESSAY ON PARLIAMENTS, Defcribing their

ORIGIN IN ENGLAND,

And the extraordinary Means by which they have been lengthened from half Yearly to Septennial ones.

By	SAM	UEL	ЈОН	INSON,	A. M.
	THE	SECO	N D	EDITIO	N.

LONDON

Printed for J. BELL, (Succeffor to Mr. BATHOE) at his Circulating-Library, near Exeter-Exchange, in the Strand; S. BLADON, Pater-nofter-Row; and C. ETBERINGTON, at York.

M. DCC. LXXII.

Digitized by GOOGLE

In the Chan a bin brincester Clumh there is a square white monble labet, with the following Inscription

To the Memory of the lev Samuel Solmson M. A. sometime stoclast of clinist Church, Qaifin, one of the Vieurs of Bampton, and for more than 24 years Minister of this Parish, the Caborious Buties of which he discharged with exemplan 'zeal and Princtuality. He departed this Life at Bampton full of Faith, March 9, 1784, aged 59 years, and lies buried with his concertors at Laycock in the county of Wills." I where have John show and Als doubling the n de la construcción de la constru No se de la construcción de la const 4[°] Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTORY

DISCOURSE.

HOUGH it is very difficult to trace the first rudiments of the policy and laws established in England, yet we have the greatest reason to believe, that the natives, even in the car. lieft ages, were divided into small communities, in which a kind of democracy had the alcendant. Cæsar, on his invation of this island, feems to confirm this opinion in feveral passages of his commentaries, and expressly tells us, " The chief command " and administration of the war was, by " the common council, beftowed on CAs-" SIVELAN." In emerging from a ftate of rudeness and fimplicity, men generally act from that fpirit of independance to which they have been accustomed. It is propable, therefore, that the old inhabitants had no monarch; but, upon any extraordinary occation, 8

ii INTRODUCTORY

occafion, fummoned a national meeting and choic a chief from among those who were the most diffinguished for their abilities.

AFTER the Romans had withdrawn their protection, and the Britons were exposed to the infults of the Picts and Scots, they invited over the Anglo-Saxons; who foon after became their tyrants, and formed feven Saxon kingdoms upon the ruins of the conquered country. In confequence of this, the antient inhabitants were exterminated, or forced to feek an afylum in the inacceffible mountains. Their laws, manners, and language were abolished, and those of the Saxons were established in their stead. To the characters of conquerors these people were ambitious to add that of legiflators: and there is very good reason to believe that many of the laws which remain in force even at-this day, are the fame which were brought from the northern parts of Germany by the Saxon invaders. Though the title of King was not used amongst them

DISCOURSE.

them, their chiefs affumed it, foon after their arrival in this island. In Saxony their governors were appointed by an affembly general of the nation, which was called WI-TENNAGEMOT, which, in the Saxon language, fignifies the meeting of the wife menand which regulated all the important affairs of the state. When the Saxon conquests in England were divided into feven kingdoms, the monarchs being under a necessity of retaining great numbers of their own countrymen among their fubjects, were cautious of exercifing a despotic power, and therefore continued to hold the Witennagemot wherever the common interest of the people was concerned. From hence in fome degree we are enabled to determine the nature of their conftitution; as each kingdom of the Heptarchy had its fovereign, it was partly monarchical; as the King could not make laws without the confent of the principal men of the nation, it was, in some degree, ariflocratical; and as the people, who held their lands of the nobles, were

a 2

fummoned

iii

INTRODUCTORY

fummoned to the general affembly, we have reason to suppose it was, in some measure, democratical. That the crown was elective seems probable from the distant branches of the royal family, often succeeding to the throne before those who were the nearest relations of the monarch.

DURING the dominion of these people. which lasted above fix hundred years, the celebrated ALFRED formed a code of laws. that will, for ever, do the greatest honour to the memory of that amiable prince. Convinced that oppression naturally follows power; to fcreen the humble from the tyranny of the great, he inftituted trials by jury; by which, in all criminal cafes it was ordained, that twelve men should decide whether the accused perfon was guilty of the offence laid to his charge or not, and that the judge thould pronounce fentence agreeably to their verdict. These twelve jurymen were chosen from amongst the peers of the delinguent. It is necessary to observe in

in this place, that in England there are but two degrees or orders of men; viz. the peers of the realm and commoners. All dukes, marquiffes, earls, vifcounts, and barons are not only peers of the realm, but peers amongst themselves; so that the most inferior baron is the peer of the greatest duke. The rest of the people are called the commoners, without diffinction, by which the poorest labourer is the peer of every one under the degree of a baron. The peers of the realm from this noble privilege, eftablifhed or revived by King ALFRED, are judged by those of their own rank; that is by the reft of the lords; and the commoners by their equals also. The only difference between the lords and commons in this metter, is, that every peer has a right to give his voice at the trial of any culprit, of the former denomination; and that twelve men only, are to acquit or condemn any perfor that is claffed amongst the latter.

AFTER various revolutions, the feven kingdoms were reduced to one, the fceptre of

vi INTRODUCTORY

of the Saxons paffed into the hands of the Danes; and returned, in process of time, into the possession of the Saxons again.

DURING these affairs the English constitution, from the best accounts, appears to have fuffered no little alteration; the nobles. by degrees, usurped an authority which the laws had not entitled them to; they limited the prerogative of the King; and invaded the rights of the people, fo that the government in England continually approached towards an Ariftocracy. The infolence of earl GOODWIN to EDWARD the Confessor probably occafioned that cautious monarch, who had good reason to suspect that the earl had intentions of aspiring to his crown, to invite over to his court WILLIAM of Normandy. This vifit, furnished that enterprizing nobleman fome years after with a pretence to inherit the throne; for on HAROLD's being nominated fucceffor to King EDWARD, WIL-LIAM infifted that he had been promifed the crown by the late King, and that HAROLD himfelf DISCOURSE. vii

himfelf had taken an oath to affift him in obtaining it; and fubmitting his caufe to the judgement of Pope ALEXANDER II. HAROLD was declared an usurper by that pontiff.

IN confequence of this decifion, WILLIAM invaded England with a powerful army, and flew HAROLD in the memorable battle of Haftings; and, by that act, ended the government of the Saxons in England, two hundred and thirty feven years after the union of the Heptarchy, and fix hundred and feventeen after the landing of HENGIST.

WILLIAM was fo far from founding his title to the crown upon a *right* of *conqueft*, that he took every method in his power to eftablifh the opinion of his being *beir* to King EDWARD, from the particular appointment of that monarch, and when he was crowned, fome time afterwards, the *pecple's confent* was obtained before he afcended the throne; and he even made a *compact* to *infure* the

VIII INTRODUCTORY

the liberties of his fubjects, by fwearing the fame coronation oath which had ufually been taken by the Saxon monarchs. Though he violated this engagement afterwards, and greatly opprefied and impoverished the people, yet the constitution, as an eminent writer observes, was not an absolute monarchy, but an engrafiment of the feudal tenures and other Norman customs upon the antient Saxon laws of EDWARD the Confesfor, which King WILLETAM not only swore to maintain, but confirmed afterwards in parliament.

THOUGH it must be allowed, that these laws were greatly altered, and produced a confiderable change in power and property, yet they were agreed to; by the whole legislature, and the liberty of the fubject was, informe respects, preserved; The freemen, fays one of the statutes enacted in this reign; shall bold and enjoy their land and possess, free from all unjust exaction and tallage; and nothing shall be exacted from them, but their free

DISCOURSE. iz

free fervice, which they, by right, owe to the crown. This, by fome learned writers, as it was comfirmed to the people by the common council of the kingdom, is called the first MAGNA CHARTA of the Normans.

AFTER the death of the conqueror, who bequeathed the crown to his fecond fon WILLIAM Rufus, the whole nation felt, in the feverest manner, what heavy burthens the feudal laws by arbitrary constructions could impose upon the subject; and how the rights of the King and liberties of the people were infringed by the power of the nobility.

IT was from the reign of HENRY I. that we ought to derive the first regular settlement of the Anglo-Norman constitution; though the commons, till long after this time, were greatly overbalanced in power and property by the clergy and nobles, who, while they interposed between the crown and the people, incroached upon the rights of the latter so much, that despotism itself b could

x INTRODUCTORY

could not be more opprefive, and the commonalty fuffered all the evils of flavery under the appearance of freedom.

THE feudal government having degenerated into a fystem of tyranny in most parts of Europe, and the usurpations of the nobles having become unbounded and intolerable; the cities of Italy became impatient to shake off the yoke of their infolent lords; and about the beginning of the eleventh century, they united together, boldly affumed new privileges, and were rouzed by fuch a spirit of independance, that they formed themfelves into corporate bodies; and, under pretence of recovering their antient property, took poffession of the castles of the barons, and obliged those haughty lords to fwear an oath of fidelity to them, and even become members of their community, and fubject their estates to all taxes and fines impofed by the common confent of the people.

Тніs

Google

DISCOUR S F.

THIS revolution foon made its way into France, where Louis le Gros, in order to take away from the power of the nobility, conferred new privileges upon the inhabitants of that nation, and formed them into corporations, which relieved them from those arbitrary and grievous impositions, to which they had formerly been fubjected, and they were governed by known and equal laws.

EVEN in the feudal fystem of policy no freeman could be governed or taxed, but by his own confent. It was natural, therefore, for the towns, who formerly depended for protection on the lords of whom they held, as foon as they were infranchifed, to be ambitious of acquiring all the rights effential to independency. In confequence of this, as they gained any degree of credit and influence, they infifted on the privilege of a decifive voice in enacting laws and granting fubfidies.

THE happy effects of admitting the reprefentatives of cities into the great council of

b 2

vi

xii INTRODUCTORY

of the nation, were foon very apparent. An intermediate power between the King and nobles was eftablished; which, on some occasions, checked the usurpations of the one, and at other times opposed the encroachments of the other. It was not long before these new institutions were introduced into HENRY I. perceiving that the England. fureft method to obtain the crown and fet afide the pretenfions of his elder brother ROBERT, would be to establish himself in the favour of the people, by procuring them fuch national benefits, as would make his interest that of the public; took every method to alleviate the heavy burthens which had become fo infupportable to the lower rank of his fubjects; he granted, to give liberty a more folid and lafting foundation, the outlines of that celebrated Charter which is the fubject of the following fheets. A Charter in which the Saxon laws in use under EDWARD the Confessor, were restored to the people, and which annulled all evil cuftoms, illegal exactions and unjust oppresfions.

DISCOURSE. xiii

fions. The King and his subjects thus united together by this great infrument of mutual obligation; the conduct of that monarch, for some time, entirely agreed with the engagements he had made; he remitted a number of debts that were due to the crown, and redreffed feveral grievances which the people complained of; by mitigating the most oppressive of the feudal laws, and punishing such persons as were enemies to the people, and had made themselves odious by an abuse of their power.

On the acceffion of King STEPHEN, he acknowledged his being elected by the confent of the people: he granted them a Charter, in which he confirmed all their liberties, privileges, and immunities; and abolished all the laws relating to hunting and the forfeits which had been enacted fince the conquest; and when he broke his compact, afterwards he involved himfelf in troubles that lasted during the greatest part of the his reign.

Wе

xiv INTRODUCTORY

WE shall say nothing here of the grant of the Great Charter, which was obtained in the year one thousand two hundred and fifteen. from King JOHN, as that interesting circumftance is fully treated of in the following hiftory. It would exceed the limits we have been obliged to prefcribe to ourfelves in this introductory effay to particularize the eftablishment of the parliament under EDWARD I. and the various changes it underwent, from the fraud of fome, and the violence of others, till the reign of that unfortunate monarch, CHARLES; whofe unhappy difputes with his commons in the year 1628, produced that fpirited remonstrance, intitled the petition of rights, which was to called, because the drift of it was, not to defire of the King any grace or favour, but only the maintenance of the rights of the people.

THIS celebrated paper was prefented by the commons, the fecond of June, 1628. and was drawn up in the following words:

To

DISCOURSE. XV

" To the King's most excellent Majesty,

" HUMBLY fhew unto our fovereign lord " the King, the lords fpiritual and tempo-" ral, and commons in parliament affem-" bled, that, whereas, it is declared and " enacted by a statute, made in the time of " the reign of King EDWARD I. commonly « called Statutum de Tallagio non conceden-" do, that no tallage or aid should be laid " or levied, by the King or his heirs, in " this realm, without the good will and " affent of the archbishops, bishops, earls, " barons, knights, burgeffes, and other free-" men of the commonalty of this realm: " and by authority of parliament holden in " the five and twentieth year of the reign " of King EDWARD III. it is declared and " enacted, that from henceforth, no per-" fon shall be compelled to make any loans " to the King against his will, because such " loans were against reason, and the fran-" chife of the land; and by other laws of " this realm it is provided, that none shall " be

xvi INTRODUCTORY

" be charged by any charge or impofition, " called a benevolence, nor by fuch like " charge, by which the flatutes before-men-" tioned, and other good laws and flatutes " of this realm, your fubjects have inherit-" ed this freedom, that they fhould not be " compelled to contribute to any tax, tallage, " aid, or other like charge, not fet by com-" mon confent in parliament.

"YET neverthelefs, of late, divers com-"miffions, directed to fundry commiffioners in feveral counties with inftructions, have been iffued, by means whereof, your people have been, in divers places, affembled, and required to lend certain fums of money unto your majefty;, and many of them, upon their refufal fo to do, have had an oath administered unto them, not warrantable by the laws and statutes of this realm, and have been constrained to become bound to make appearance, and give attendance before your privycouncil and in other places, and others of " of them have been therefore imprisoned, " confined, and fundry other ways molef-" ted and disquieted: and divers other " charges have been laid and levied upon « your people in feveral counties, by lord " lieutenants, deputy lieutenants, commif-" fioners for mufters, justices of peace, and " others, by command or direction from " your majesty, or your privy-council, " against the laws and free customs of the " realm. And where, also, by the statute " called, The Great Charter of the liberties " of England; it is declared and enacted, " That no freeman may be taken or im-" prifoned, or be diffeized of his freehold " of liberties, or his free customs, or be " outlawed or exiled, or in any manner def-" troyed, but by lawful judgement of his " peers, or by the law of the land.

" AND in the eight and twentieth year of the reign of King EDWARD III. it was declared and enacted by authority of pariliament, That no man, of what effate

С

" or

xviii INTRODUCTORY

" or condition that he be, fhould be put " out of his lands or tenements, nor taken, " nor imprifoned, nor difinherited, nor put " to death without being brought to answer " by due process of law.

" NEVERTHELESS, against the tenour of " the faid statutes, and other, the good " laws and statutes of your realm, to that " end provided, divers of your fubjects have " of late been imprisoned, without any just " caufe fhewed; and when for their deliver-" ance they were brought before your juf-" tices, by your majefty's writs of Habeas " Corpus, there to undergo and receive as " the court should order, and their keepers " commanded to certify the caufes of their " detainer; no caufe was certified, but that " they were detained by your majefty's fpe-" cial command, fignified by the lords of " your privy council, and yet were returned " back to feveral prifons without being char-" ged with any thing to which they might " answer according to law.

" AND

DISCOURSE, xix

" AND whereas of late great companies of foldiers and mariners have been difperfed into divers counties of the realm, and the inhabitants against their wills have been compelled to receive them into their houses, and there to suffer them to fojourn, against the laws and customs of this realm, and to the great grievance and vexation of the people.

" And whereas also by authority of par-"liament in the twenty fifth year of the " reign of King EDWARD III. it is declared " and enacted, that no man should be fore-" judged of life or limb, against the form of " the Great Charter, and the laws of the land, " and by the faid Great Charter, and other the " laws and statutes of this your realm, no man " ought to to be adjudged to death, but by " the laws established in this your realm, ei-" ther by the cuftoms of the fame realm or " by acts of parliament: and whereas no " offender of what kind foever is exempted " from the proceedings to be used, and punifhments C 2

x INTRODUCTORY

" nishments to be inflicted by the laws and " statutes of this your realm; nevertheles " of late time, divers commissions under "your majefty's great feal have iffued forth. " by which certain perfons have been affign-" ed and appointed commissioners, with " power and authority to proceed within the " land, according to the justice of martial " law against fuch foldiers, and mariners, " or other diffolute perfons joining with " them, as should commit any murder. " robbery, felony, mutiny, or other out-" rage or mildemeanor, whatfoever; and . " by fuch fummary course and order as is " agreeable to martial law, and as is used in " armies in time of war, to proceed to the " trial and condemnation of fuch offenders, " and them to cause to be executed and put " to death according to the law martial.

"By pretext whereof fome of your majefly's fubjects have been by fome of the faid commiffioners put to death; when and where, if by the laws and flatutes of the land,

Digized by GLOOgle

DISCOURSE. mi

" land, they had deferved death, by the fame laws and ftatutes also they might, and by no other ought, to have been judged and executed.

" And also fundry grievous offenders by colour thereof, claiming an exemption. have escaped the punishments due to them by the laws and statutes of this your realm, by the laws and statutes of this your realm, by reason that divers of your officers and ministers of justice have unjustly refused or forborne to proceed against such offen. ders according to the same laws and statutes, upon pretence that the said offen. ders were punishable only by martial laws and by authority of such commission as aforessid; which commission and all others of like nature, are wholly and directly contrary to the said laws and statutes of this your realm.

" THEY do therefore humbly pray your most excellent majesty that no man hereafter be compelled to make or yield any gift,

xxii INTRODUCTORY

" gift, loan, benevolence, tax, or fuch like " charge, without common confent by act of " parliament; and that none be called to " make answer, or take fuch oath, or to " give attendance, or be confined, or other-" wife molefled or difquieted concerning the " fame, or for refufal thereof: and that no " freeman in any fuch manner, as is before mentioned, be imprisoned or detained: " and that your majefty would be pleafed " to remove the faid foldiers and mariners. " and that your people may not be fo burthen-" ed in the time to come : and that the afore-" faid commiffions for proceeding by martial " law, may be revoked, and annulled; and " that hereafter, no commissions of like na-" ture, may iffue forth to any perfon or per-" fons whatfoever, to be executed as afore-" faid, left by colour of them, any of your " majesty's subjects be destroyed or put to death, " contrary to the laws and franchifes of the land,

" All which they most humbly pray of your most excellent majesty, as their rights and

DISCOURSE. xxii

" and liberties, according to the laws and " statutes of this realm : and that your " majesty would also vouchfase to deulare. " that the awards, doings, and proceedings " to the prejudice of your people in any of " the premifes, shall not be drawn here-" after into confequence or example: and " that your m jefty would be also graciouf-" ly pleafed, for the further comfort and " fafety of your people, to declare your " royal will and pleafure, that in the things " aforefaid, all your officers and ministers " shall serve you according to the laws and " statutes of this realm, as they tender the « honour of your majefty and the prof-" perity of this kingdom."

THOUGH this petition had for its foundation, Magna Charta, fix other statutes, and a great number of precedents, yet the King endeavoured to evade the passing of it into a law, and when it was carried, he was so offended with the attempts of his people for an effectual redress of their grievances, that he abruptly

xxiv INTRODUCTORY ruptly diffolved the parliament, and never called another for twelve years afterwards.

IN 1640, after the people had made various applications to the monarch, in confequence of the principles of arbitrary power afferted by the court, having bred a general difcontent, he fummoned a parliament, which paffed the celebrated triennial bill, providing that a parliament should be held every third year.

On the debate upon this bill, lord DIGBY, obferved, that it had been a maxim among the wifeft legiflators, that whoever means to fettle good laws, must proceed in them, with a finister opinion of all mankind; and suppose that whoever is not wicked, it is for want only of the opportunity. It is that opportunity of being ill, Mr. Speaker, faid he, that we must take away, if ever we mean to be happy, which can never be done, but by the frequency of parliaments. No state can wifely be confident of any public minister's continuing

continuing good, longer than the rod is over him. Surely therefore there is no man but will conclude with me, that as the deficiency of parliaments, hath been the caufe caufarum of all the mifchiefs and diffempers of the prefent times; fo the frequency of them is the fole catholic antidote that can preferve and fecure the future from the like.

THE unhappy divisions between this prince and his people, it is well known, at last terminated in a civil war, foon after which the King lost his life, the parliament feized upon the whole fovereign authority, and entirely fubverted the constitution.

UPON the re-establishment of the government at the reftoration, the power of the crown was greatly increased by the fervility of the members of the house of commons, till the lords, joining with the King, in an attempt to annex the taking and settling the public accounts to the prerogative, they met with great opposition from the representad tives

xxvi INTRODUCTORY

tives of the people, who thought they had fubmitted to be fleeced in a most unmerciful manner, were not quite fo tractable as to give up all their rights, but spiritedly voted the King's guards to be unconstitutional and passed the *Habeas Corpus* bill, which will always make their memory held in estimation by every lover of his country.

ABOUT this period, the house was divided into two parties, one of which was diftinguished by the name of the Court, and the other by the title of the Country; the former, favs fir WILLIAM TEMPLE, were grown numerous by a practice introduced about five years before this time, by the lord treasurer CLIFFORD, of downright buying off one man after another, as they could make the bargain. The country party still continued the majority, and retained more credit upon the corruption of the others, and their profession of adherence to the true interests of the nation, especially in the points of France, and popery. Where these came in question, many

DISCOURSE. xxvii

many of the court party voted with those of the country, who then carried all before them; but whenever the court appeared to fall in with the true interests of the nation, especially in those two points, then many of the country party meaning fairly, fell in with the court and carried the votes; as they soon did upon the King's pretence to grow bold with France, and resolve upon a war, if the peace was refused.

THE parliaments held afterwards in the reign of King CHARLES II. behaved with great fpirit in paffing the celebrated exclufion bill; and though the only parliament fummoned by King JAMES, acted with rather too much fubmiffion, in granting him the revenues enjoyed by his brother, and depending upon his word for the fecurity of the church of England, they never gave up the true intereft of their country, fince they ftadfaftly refused fome time after to coincide with his arbitrary measures.

d 2

AT

XXVIII INTRODUCTORY

At the glorious revolution the Bill of Rights further contributed to preferve the liberties of the people. The contents of this hoble inftrument are as follow:

* I. THAT the pretended power of ful-* pending of laws, or execution of laws, by * regal authority; without confent of par-* liament; is illegal.

" II. THAT the pretended power of difpenfing with laws or the execution of it laws, by regal authority, as it hath been affumed and exercised of late, is illegal.

" III. THAT the commission for erecting the late court of commissioners for ecclefiaftical causes and all other commissioners and courts of the like nature, are illegal and permissions.

" IV. THAT the levying of money for " or to the use of 'the crown, by pretence of prerogative, without grant of parlia-" ment,

DIŚCOURŚE. xxiz

" ment, for longer time, or in any other manner than the fame is, or shell be granted, is illegal.

" V. THAT it is the right of the fub-" jects to petition the King, and all com-" mitments and profecutions for fuch peti-" tioning are illegal.

"VI. THAT the raising or keeping a "fanding army within the kingdom in time of peace, unless it be with consent of par-"liament, is against law.

"VII. THAT the fubjects, which are protestants, may have arms for their defence, fuitable to their condition, and as allowed by law.

" VIII. THAT election of members of " parliament ought to be free.

" IX. THAT the freedom of fpeech, and debates or proceedings in parliament, " ought

XXX INTRODUCTORY

" ought not to be impeached or questioned, " in any court or place out of parliament

"X. THAT exceffive bail ought not to be required, nor exceffive fines imposed, nor cruel and unufual punishments inflicted.

" XI. THAT jurors ought to be duly em-" pannelled and returned; and jurors, which " pafs upon men in trial for high-treafon, " ought to be freeholders.

" XII. THAT all grants and promifes, " of fines and forfeitures of particular per-" fons, before conviction, are illegal and " void.

" XIII. AND that for redress of all grie-" vances, and for the amending, strengthen-" ing, and preferving of the laws, parlia-" ments ought to be held frequently."

ANOTHER

DISCOURSE. xxxi

ANOTHER popular bill, which paffed in this reign, was that for limiting the duration of parliaments for three years; as the people had fuffered extremely during the long fitting of the house of commons in the former reigns, in which the triennal act passed by CHARLES I. had been repealed. To the proceedings of the house of commons at this time also, we owe our present happy fituation, under the house of Hanover, the succeffion of which was established upon the following excellent conditions:

" I. THAT all things relating to the well governing of this kingdom, which are properly cognizable in the privy-council, fhall be transfacted there, and all resolutions taken thereupon, shall be figned by the Privy-council.

" II. THAT no perfon whatfoever, that " is not a native of England, Scotland or " Ireland, or the dominions thereunto be-" longing; or who is not born of English pa-" rents

xxxii INTRODUCTORY

rents beyond the feas, although fuch perfons be naturalized or made denizens,
thall be capable of any grant of lands, tenements, or bereditaments from the crown,
to himfelf, or any other in truft for him.

" III. THAT upon the further limitation of the crown, in cafe the fame thall herefatter come to any perfon, not being a native of this kingdom of England, this nation be not obliged to engage in any war for the defence of any dominion, or territories, not belonging to the crown of England, without the confent of parliament.

" IV. THAT whofoever shall hereafter come to the possession of this crown, shall join in communion with the church of England as by law established.

" V. THAT no pardon be pleadable to any impeachment in parliament.

" VI. THAT

DISCOURSE. xxxiii

" VI. THAT no perfon who shall here-" after come to the possession of this crown, " shall go out of the dominions of England, " Scotland, or Ireland, without consent of " parliament.

" VII. THAT no perfon, who has any " office under the King, or receives a pen-" fion from the crown, fhall be capable of " ferving as a member of the house of com-" mons.

⁴ VIII. THAT further Provisions be made, ⁴ for the confirming of all laws and statutes ⁴ for the fecuring our religion and the rights ⁴ and liberties of the people.

" IX. THAT judges' commissions be made Quamdiu fe bene gesserint, and their faleries afcertained and established; but upon the address of either house of parliament, it may be lawful to remove them.

e

" Х. ТНАТ

XXXIV INTRODUCTORY

"X. THAT the prince's SOPHIA, dutch-"efs dowager of Hanover, be declared the "next in fucceffion to the crown of England, in the protestant line, after his majefty and the prince's, and the heirs of their bodies respectively; and that the further limitation of the crown be to the faid prince's SOPHIA and the heirs of her body, being protestants."

THE national meetings in Queen ANN's time, were replete with craft, faction, and perfidy; for though the honour of the Queen and the good of the public were loudly talked of, yet all was fwallowed up in *felfintereft*; and clamour, cabal, and confusion prevailed.

On the acceffion of King GEORGE I. the diforders of those times made it neceffary to pass the *riot ast*; which, as soon as tranquility was restored, should certainly have been repealed; as it has fince been attended with many fatal consequences, which are too recent

DISCOURSE.

cent in the minds of the public, to need a recapitulation here. The Habeas Corpus act was at this time fulpended, and the ob/equious house of commons, to oblige the ministry, repealed the triennial bill, and *strange to tell!* not only made all future parliaments *septennial*, but also enacted, that they themselves, who were chosen by their constituents for three years only, should *continue* representatives for seven.

THE speech of a worthy member in opposition to this step, is not undeferving the attention of our readers.

HE observed, that the right of electing representatives in parliament was inseparably inherent in the people of Great Britain, and could never be thought to be deligated to the representatives, unless they made the *elected* the *elector*, and at the fame time, supposed it the will of the people, that their representatives should have it in their power to destroy those who made them, whenever a ministry e 2 should

XXXV

XXXVI INTRODUCTORY

fhould think it neceffary to forcen themfelves from their juft refertments: that this would be to deftroy the fence of all their freedom; for if they had a right to continue themfelves one year, one month, or one day, beyond their triennial term, it will unavoidably follow, that they have it in their power to make themfelves perpetual. He further obferved, that to fay, the paffing of this bill, was not to grafp to themfelves the right of election, but only to enlarge the time of calling new parliaments, was a manifeft fallacy: for whenever the three years were expired, they could no longer be faid to fubfift by the choice of the people, but by their own appointment.

For these reasons, he thought the bill an open violation of the people's liberties; or to speak most mildly of it, a breach of the members trust, in that part which would most sensibly affect them; and of that ill tendency in its confequence, that as nothing but the fecurity of the ministry could make it, at

that

DISCOURSE. XXXVII

that time, needful; so nothing but a standing force could make it lasting.

Notwithstanding the remonstrances of thirty lords who entered their protests against this bill, because, as they observed, frequent and new parliaments are required by the fundamental laws of the constitution, and that the bill, was, in their opinion, so far from preventing expences and corruptions that it would rather tend to increase them as the longer a parliament is to last, the more valuable a station in it muss become. And the greater will be the danger of corrupting the members of it; yet this extraordinary bill on the question being put in the house of lords, was carried in the affirmative by ninety fix votes against fixty one.

In confequence of this proceeding, various petitions were prefented to the house of commons, from different parts of the kingdom, declaring that the people looked upon it, as an attempt to overturn the conflictution. The

xxxviii INTRODUCTORY

The bill, however, paffed the commons, by two hundred and fixty-four, against one hundred and twenty-one, though the public had the greatest right to oppose it, both in behalf of themselves and their posterity.

About the year 1717, the monarchical mode of governing by *flanding armies* was adopted by the house of commons, though great opposition was made to this step by the patriotic members.

AT the beginning of the reign of his late majefty in the year 1732, the famous excife fcheme was brought into the houfe by Sir ROBERT WALPOLE, which ftriking at the very root of our liberties, raifed fuch a tumult in the nation, that a number of petitions against the bill were prefented to the houfe, from the city of London, Bristol, and most of the capital towns in the kingdom. This occasioned the measure to be dropped, on which the people expressed their fatisfacby the greatest transports of joy, and celebrated

D I S C O U R S E. xxxix brated their triumph by burning the minifter in effigy.

A SHORT time after the acceffion of our prefent most gracious fovereign, the cyder tax occasioned a great clamour throughout the whole nation, it being look upon as partial and opreffive, and the means of collecting it, dangerous and unconstitutional. In confequence of this, the people instructed the representatives to oppose this scheme, and petition every branch of the legislature against it; notwithstanding this, the bill passed and occasioned great discontents amongst the people, and continued in full force till it was repealed by means of the popular ministry in the year 1766.

To inveftigate the merits of our prefent unhappy difputes with the Americans, and the conteft between the administration and Mr. WILKES, would fill a confiderable volume; but as the various grievances complained of by the people are enumerated in a concife

Ĺ

xI INTRODUCTORY

concife and spirited manner, in the petition of the freeholders of Middlefex, it may not be unnecessary to lay it, in this place, before our readers, especially as we have already prefement them with copies of the most celebrated papers that have been written in the glorious cause of liberty.

To the King's most Excellent Majesty,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the FREEHOLDERS of the COUNTY of MIDDLESEX.

Most Gracious Sovereign,

"WE, your majefty's dutiful and loyal "fubjects, the freeholders of the county of Middlefex, beg leave, with all affectionate fubmiffion and humanity, to throw ourfelves at your royal feet, and humbly to implore your paternal attention to those grievances, of which this county and the whole nation complain, and those fearful apprehensions with which the whole British Empire is most justly alarmed.

"WITH great grief and forrow we have long beheld the endeavours of certain evil minded perfons, who attempt to infufe into

DISCOURSE. xli

" into your royal mind, notions and opinions of the most dangerous and pernicious tendency, and who promote and counsel fuch measures as cannot fail to destroy that harmony and confidence, which should ever subsist between a just and virtuous prince and a free and loyal people.

"For this difaffected purpole, they have introduced into every part of the adminiftration of our happy, legal conftitution, a certain unlimited and and indefinite difcretionary power; to prevent which is the fole aim of all our laws, and was the fole caufe of all those diffurbances and revolutions, which formerly diffracted this unhappy country; for our anceftors, by their own fatal experiences, well knew, that in a ftate, where differences, law, liberty, and fafety end. Under the pretence of this difference, as it was formerly, and has been lately called — law of ftate — we have feen:

" ENGLISH fubjects, and even a member " of the british legislature, arrested by virtue f ". of

xiii INTRODUCTORY

" of a general warrant, iffued by a fecretary " of flate, contrary to the law of the land:

" THEIR houses rifled and plundered, their papers feized, and used as evidence upon trial:

" THEIR bodies committed to close im-" prifonment:

" THE Habeas Corpus eluded:

" TRIAL by jury difcountenanced, and the first law-officer of the crown publicly infinuating that juries are not to be trusted:

" PRINTERS punished by the ministry in " the supreme court without a trial by their " equals — without any trial at all :

" THE remedy of the law for falle im-" prifonment barred and defeated :

" THE plaintiff and his attorney, for their " appeal to the law of the land, punished by

DISCOURSE. xiii

" by expences and imprifonment, and made, by forced engagements, to defift from their legal claim:

"A WRITING determined to be a libel " by a court where it was not cognizable in " the first instance, contrary to law, because " all appeal is thereby cut off, and inferior " courts and juries influenced by fuch pre-" determination:

" A PERSON condemned in the faid court as the author of the fuppofed libel unheard without defence or trial:

" UNJUST treatment of petitions, by fe-" lecting only fuch parts as might be wrefted " to criminate the petitioner, and refufing to " hear those which might procure him re-" drefs:

" THE thanks of one branch of the legi-" flature proposed by a minister to be given " to an acknowledged offender for his off 2 " fence,

xliv INTRODUCTORY

" fence, with the declared intention of fcreen-" " ing him from law:

" ATTACHMENTS wrefted from their ori-" ginal intent of removing obftructions to the " proceedings of law, to punifh, by fentence " of arbitrary fine and imprifonment, with-" out trial or appeal, fuppofed offences com-" mitted out of court:

" PERPETUAL imprifonment of an En-" glifhman without trial, conviction, or " fentence, by the fame mode of attachment, " wherein the fame perfon is at once party, " accufer, judge, and jury:

" INSTEAD of the antient and legal civil police, the military introduced at every opportunity, unneceffarily and unlawfully patrolling the freets, to the alarm and terror of the inhabitants:

" THE lives of many of your majefty's innocent lubjects deftroyed by military execution:

" SUCH

D I S C O U R S E. xlv "SUCH military execution folemnly adjudged to be legal:

. " MURDER abetted, encouraged, and re-"warded:

" THE civil magistracy rendered contemptible by the appointment of improper and incapable perfons:

" THE civil magistrates tampered with by administration, and neglecting and refuting to discharge their duty:

" MOBS and rioters hired and raifed by the miniftry, in order to juftify and recommend their own illegal proceedings, and to prejudice your majefty's mind by falfe infinuations against the loyalty of your majefty's fubjects.

" THE freedom of election violated by cor-" rupt and undue influence, by unpunished " violence and murder;

.

" The

xlvi INTRODUCTORY

" THE just verdicts of juries, and the opiinion of the judges, over-ruled by false representations to your majesty; and the determinations of the law set aside, by new, unprecedented, and dangerous means; thereby leaving the guilty without restrain, and the injured without redress, and the lives of your majesty's subjects at the mercy of every ruffian protected by administration:

" OBSOLETE and vexatious claims of the " crown fet on foot for partial and election " purpofes:

" PARTIAL attacks on the liberty of the prefs: the most daring and pernicious libels against the constitution, and against the liberty of the subject, being allowed to pass unnoticed, whilst the slightest libel against a minister is punished with the utmost rigour:

" WICKED

DISCOURSE. xlvii

"WICKED attempts to increase and establish a standing army, by endeavouring to vest in the crown an unlimited power over the militia; which, should they succeed, must, sooner or later, subvert the constitution, by augmenting the power of administration in proportion to their delinquincy:

" REPEATED endeavours to diminish the importance of members of parliament individually, in order to render them more dependent on administration collectively. Even threats having been employed by ministers to suppress the freedom of debate; and the wrath of parliament denounced against measures authorized by the law of the land:

" RESOLUTIONS of one branch of the le-" giflature, fet up as the law of the land, " being a direct ufurpation of the rights of " the two other branches, and therefore a " manifest infringement of the constitution: " PUBLIC

xlviii INTRODUCTORY

" PUBLIC money fhamefully fquandered and unaccounted for, and all inquiry into the caufe of arrears in the civil lift prevented by the miniftry:

" INQUIRY into a pay-mafter's public accounts ftopped in the exchequer, though the fums unaccounted for by that pay-mafter, amount to above forty millions fterling:

" PUBLIC loans perverted to private mi-" nifterial purpofes:

" PROSTITUTION of public honours and rewards to men who can neither plead public virtue nor fervices:

" IRRELIGION and immortality, fo emi-" nently difcountenanced by your majefty's " royal example, encouraged by administra-" tion both by example and precept:

" THE

ISCOURSE. D lvir

" THE fame diferention has been extended " by the fame evil counfellors to your ma-" jefty's dominions in America, and has pro-" duced to our fuffering fellow fubjects in " that part of the world, grievances and ap-" prehentions fimilar to those of which we " complain at home.

" Moft Gracious Sovereign,

" SUCH are the grievances and apprehen-" fions which have long difcontented and " diffurbed the greatest and best part of your " majefty's loyal fubjects. Unwilling, how-" ever, to interrupt your royal repose, " though ready to lay down our lives and " fortunes for your majefty's fervice, and for " the conflitution as by law eftablished, we " have waited patiently, expecting a confti-" tutional remedy by the means of our own " reprefentatives: but our legal and free " choice having been repeatedly rejected, " and the right of election now finally taken " from us by the unprecedented feating of a " candidate who was never chosen by the " county,

g

lx INTRODUCTORY

" county, and who, even to become a can-" didate, was obliged, fradulently, to vacate " his feat in parliament, under the pretence " of an infignificant place, invited thereto by " the prior declaration of a minifter, that " whoever oppofed our choice, though but " with four votes, fhould be declared mem-" ber for the county. We fee ourfelves, " even by this last act, deprived even of the " franchifes of Englishmen, reduced to the " most abject state of flavery, and less with-" out hopes or means of redrefs but from your " majesty or God.

" DEIGN then, Moft Gracious Sovereign, to liften to the prayer of the moft faithful of your Majefty's fubjects; and to banifh from your royal favour, truft, and confidence, for ever, those evil and pernicious counfellors, who have endeavoured to alienate the affection of your Majefty's most fincere and dutiful fubjects, and whose fuggestions tend to deprive your people of their dearest and most effential "rights,

S C O U R S F. D T lxi

" rights, and who have traiteroufly dared to " depart from the fpirit and letter of those " laws which have fecured the crown of " these realms to the house of Brunswick ; " in which we make our most earnest pray-" ers to GoD, that it may continue untarnish-" ed to the lateft posterity."

(Copy)

Signed by

1565 Freeholders.

WE shall now dismiss this discourse, with our fincere wifhes, that a fpeedy end may be put to the prefent national divisions, and that the vigour of the British constitution may remain unimpaired to the latest posterity, earneftly reccommending to those whom it may concern, the two following excellent observations from Sir William Temple's effays:

THE first safety of princes and states, lies " in avoiding all councils, or defigns of inno-" vation, in antient and established forms and " laws, g 2

lxii INTRODUCTORY

" laws, efpecially those concerning liberty, " property, and religion, which are the posfeffions men will ever have most at heart, and thereby leaving the channel of known and common justice clear and undisturbed.

" THE fecond, in purfuing the true and " common interest of the nation they govern, " with out espousing those of any party or " faction; or if these are so formed in a state, " that they must incline to one or other, then " to chufe and favour that which is most " popular, or wherein the greateft or ftrong-" eft part of the people appear to be en-" gaged. For as the end of government " feems to be Salus populi, the fafety or wel-" fare of the people; fo the ftrength of the " government is the confent of the people " which made that maxim of Vox populi, " Vex Dei: That is, THE GOVERNORS, " WHO ARE FEW, WILL EVER BE FOR-" CED TO FOLLOW THE STRENGTH " OF THE GOVERNED, WHO ARE MA-" NY."

A HISTORY



A

HISTORY and DEFENCE

0 F

MAGNA CHARTA,

E that would animate mankind to the H is fupport of freedom, which is their common caufe, fhould himfelf feel in an eminent degree, that ardour which he wifnes to infpire. Even an enthufiafm therein may be deemed a holy rapture, fince that by which it is produced is the caufe of GoD; and is fo great a good to the first order in his creation.

B

THIS

.

THIS being premifed, fuffer me, my dear friends and fellow citizens, to intreat you to let your fons fucceed to that liberty which you have fo comfortably enjoyed—for which your fathers have fought, with fo much ardour, and with fo much glory.—For which they fuftained fo many labours, fo much grief, fuch multitudes of dangers, under the heavy hands of fubtile priefts, and of evil kings.

THEY fped in all these toilfome warfares. And how could they have failed? The nerves of men in a cause so noble are endued with double vigour. The general ardour is derived to each, because,

"When men, for this, affault a throne,

- Each adds the common welfare to his own;
- " And each unconquer'd heart the ftrength of all acquires."

WE have lived to fee the most valuable part of the charter of our most facred rights daringly invaded — but we will not live to fee it destroyed. The wounds by which it falls shall first reach our hearts, and the rich torrents of our blood be fned as a libration on the pile of expiring freedom.

LET us preferve the Great Charter of our liberties with the fame firmnefs as that by which it was obtained, and by which it has been preferved

to

MAGNA CHARTA.

to us against the repeated attacks of wicked and abandoned traitors, and this is only to be done by the firmness and intrepidity of Englishmen.

BUT, that my countrymen may learn throughly to understand the value of their birthright, I shall give the history of MAONA CHARTA, together with a defence of it, in the homely language of an honess man, against the aspersions thrown on it by LAUD and many others, and now revived by those who are the enemies of our liberties, and are therefore the enemies of our peace.

IN order to this I fhall first shew, That Magna Charta is much elder than K. JOHN's time, and confequently that its birth cannot be blemissed with any thing that was done in his reign, though his confirmation of it had been really extorted by rebellion. Secondly, That the confirmations which were had and procured to it in K. JOHN's and HENRY the third's time, were far from being gained by rebellion.

FIRST, The contents of Magna Charta is the undoubted inheritance of England, being their antient and approved laws; fo antient, that they feem to be of the fame standing with B 2 the

3

the nation; and fo well approved, that FORTESC CUE*, applauding our laws, triumphs in this, That they paffed through all the British, Roman, Danish, Saxon, and Norman times, with little or no alteration in the main. Now, fays he, if they had not been liked by these people, they would have been altered. Accordingly, in this last Norman revolution K. WILLIAM I. (falsing and flatteringly called the conqueror) swore to the inviolable observation of them under this titles of "The good, antient, and approved laws of the " realm," and particularly and by name, K. EDwARD's laws. So antient is the matter and substance of Magna Charta.

SECONDLY, Nor was the manner and form of granting thefe laws by charter, or under hand and feal, with the confirmation of an oath over and above the coronation-oath, any new invention or innovation at all; for as WILLIAM I. began it, fo I am fure that HENRY I. and K. STE-PHEN, and HENRY II. did the fame before: and therefore if the obfcure birth of Magna Charta was in K. JOHN's time, it was then born with a

* De Laud. Leg. Ang.

grey

grey beard, for it was in being in his great grandfather's reign.

FOR, thirdly, That very charter of his great grandfather HENRY I. was the ground and reafon of the parliament's infifting upon having the like confirmation of their liberties by K. JOHN. and was the copy by which they went. For though K. JOHN, at his abfolution at Winchefter* from the pope's fentence and excommunication. had folemnly fworn to reftore the good laws of his predeceffors, and particularly those of K. EpwARD; and though prefently after, at a parliament at St. Alban's, the laws of K. HENRY I. were ordained to be observed throughout all England, and all bad laws to be abolifhed: yet, contrary to both these late engagements, he was marching an army in all haste to fall upon feveral of his barons, who had lately failed in following him in an intended expedition into France. But the archbishop stopped him in his career, by following him to Northampton, and there telling him that it would be a breach of his oath at his late abfolution, to make war upon his fubjects with-

* A. D. 1213. Reg. 15.

out

Digitized by Google

٢

out judgment in parliament. The King huffed him, and told him, "That this was lay bufinefs, "and that he would not delay bufinefs of the "kingdom for him;" and by break of day, next morning, marched haftily towards Nottingham. The archbifhop ftill followed him, affuring him that he would excommunicate all his followers, if they proceeded any farther in this hoftile way; and never left him till he had fet a day for a parliament, that the barons might there anfwer it.

Tuis parliament was held at London, in St. Paul's church ; where, before it ended, the archbishop took fome of the lords apart, and put them in mind how he made the king fwear at Winchefter to reftore the good laws of King EDWARD. and cause them to be observed by all the realm. And now, fays he, there is likewife found a certain charter of HENRY L. King of England, by which, if you pleafe, you may be able to reftore your long loft liberties to their former state and condition; and, producing the charter, he caufed it to be read all over in their hearing : which the lords having heard and underftood, were overjoyed, and fwore in the prefence of the archbishop, " That when they faw it convenient for their li-" berties, if need were, they would fpend their " lives."

MAGNA CHARTA.

" lives." The archbishop, for his part, promised them his most faithful aid and affistance to the utmost of his power; and after this affociation was thus entered into, the parliament broke up.

THERE had paffed but one hundred and thirteen years fince the grant of HENRY the first's charter: and, though there were then made as many charters as there were fhires (directed to the theriff of every county to proclaim them, for this is directed to HUGH DE BOCLAND, theriff of Herefordshire) and, by the king's express order, were to be laid up in the abbies of the feveral counties for a monument; yet, because the thing was beyond the memory of man, and that age not very conversant with book-learning or records, it feems not to be known to them; and the archbishop fays, " Inventa est quoque nunc charta quædam " HEN. L" But, when the lords had once feen it, they were fo fond of it, that they got it from the archbishop: and the next year, about Michaelmas, when the King was returning out of France, the earls and barons met at St. Edmund's bury, it might be thought for devotion, but it was to confult about their liberties : and there the charter of HENRY I. which contained their laws and liberties was again produced and treated of among

7

among them. After which they all went to the high altar, and there fwore in order, beginning at the greatest, " That, if the King should refuse " to confirm by his charter the faid laws and li-" berties (being the rights of the kingdom) they " would make war upon him till he did." And likewife at laft by common confent they came to this refolution, " That they would go together to " the King after Christmas. and defire him to " confirm the faid liberties. And, in the mean " time, that they would make fuch provision of " horfes and arms; that, in cafe the king fhould " ftart from his late oath, wherein he promifed " it (which they had too much reason to believe. " becaufe of his doublenefs) they might then " compel him to performance by feizing his " caffles,"

ACCORDINGLY, after Christmas they came to the King in a gay military habit, and defired the confirmation of their antient liberties, as they were contained in writing in the charter of HEN-RY I. and the laws of K. EDWARD. They affirmed likewife, that by his oath at Winchester, he had promifed those laws and liberties, and that he was already bound to keep them by his own oath. The king feeing the constancy and refolution

lution of the barons in their demand, did not think fit to deny them, but defired refuite and time to confider of it, being a weighty bufinefs, till after Easter; and after several proposals on both fides, the King very unwillingly fet a day. and the archbishop, bishop of Ely, and lord marfhal were his fureties, that then they fhould all of them have fatisfaction given them in reason. Upon this the lords went home. But the King in the mean time, by way of precaution, caufed the whole realm to fwear fealty to him alone against all men, and to renew their homages. And as a farther fecurity and protection, more than out of devotion, at Candlemas following he took upon him the crofs.

IN Easter-week the forementioned lords met at Stanford, who now had drawn together in favour of them almost all the nobility and principal gentry of England: fo that they amounted to a numerous army; and the fooner, becaufe K. JOHN had rendered himself universally hated. In this retinue were two thousand knights, besides all others of lower rank, horse and foot diversly armed. The King was then at Oxford expecting the coming of the parliament. On the Monday following these affociated barons came to Brackley; Sc which, 10

which, when the King understood, he fent to them the archbishop, the lord marshal, earl of Pembroke, and feveral other fage perfons, to know what were the laws and liberties they required: which they prefently delivered in a schedule to those that came from the King, affirming. That if he would not forthwith confirm them under his feal, they would compel him, by feizing his caftles, lands, and poffeffions, till he gave them competent fatisfaction in the premifes. Then the archbishop, with the rest of his company, carrying this schedule to the king, rehearsed all the chapters or heads of it before him memoriter. But when the King understood the purport of it, he laughed and faid with the utmost indignation and fcorn, " And why do not the barons, " together with thefe unjust demands. demand my " kingdom? The things they afk," faid he, " are idle and fuperflitious, and not fupported " by any title or pretence of reason." And at length, in a great rage he affirmed with an oath, that he would never grant them fuch liberties, whereby he himfelf fhould be made a fervant.

WHEN, therefore, the archbifhop and earl of Pembroke could, in no wife, gain the King's confent to these liberties, by his command they returned

MAGNA CHARTA

returned to the barons, and there reported just what the King had faid in order. Whereupon the barons prefently chose them a general, and flew to their arms, and marched directly to Northampton to feize that caftle. But having fpent fifteen days in that fruitlefs attempt, having no petards nor other warlike inftruments to carry on a feige, fomewhat abashed with this difappointment, they marched to Bedford, where they were kindly received; and by meffengers fent to them from the principal citizens, were invited to London. When they were come thither, they fent letters to all the earls, barons, and knights, that as yet feemed to adhere to the King, though it were but feignedly; that as they tendered their estates, they should leave a perjured King, and come and join them, and effectually engage with them for the liberties and peace of the realm: otherwife, they threatened to treat them as public enemies. Upon which, most of the lords, who had not as yet fworn to the faid liberties, wholly leaving the King, came to London, and there affociated with the barons.

KING JOHN, feeing himfelf thus generally forfaken, fo that he had hardly feven knights remaining with him, and fearing, left the barons C 2 fhould

11

should infult his camp, which they might eafily have done without opposition, he betook himfelf to fraud and diffembling, pretending peace, when he had immortal war in his heart, refolving hereafter to oppress the barons fingly, whom he could not all at once. He therefore fends to them the earl of Pembroke and other perfons of credit with this meffage, " That for the benefit " of peace, and for the advancement and ho-" nour of his realm, he would willingly grant " them the laws and liberties which they defired," leaving to the barons to appoint a convenient time and place for the performance. They very gladly fet the King a day, to meet June 15, at Running-mead, betwixt Stanes and Windfor, an antient place for the meeting of parliaments.

THE King and the lords accordingly met, and their parties fitting afunder, and keeping to their bwn fide, treated of the peace and the liberties a good while. There were prefent, as it were of the King's party, the archbishop, and about thirty principal perfons more, whom Matthew Paris names; but, fays he, they that were on the barons' fide were past reckoning, feeing the whole nobility of England gathered together in a body feemed hot to fall under number. At length, after they had had treated in feveral forts, the King feeing the barons were too powerful for him, made no difficulty to grant them the laws and liberties underwritten, and to confirm them in his charter in this manner.

HERE follows Magna Charta in Matthew. Paris*. And because there was not room for the liberties and free customs of the forest in the same parchment, they were contained in another charter, De Foresta. And then follows the security for them both.

AFTER this, the King fent his letters patent to all the fheriffs in England, to caufe all perfons, of what condition foever, to fwear, That they would obferve thefe aforefaid laws and liberties, and to the utmost of their power, diftrefs the King by feizing his caftles, and otherwise ftraiten him to the execution and performance of all things contained in the charter. At last, the parliament being ended, the barons returned to London with their charters.

Thus have I given you a fhort view of the noble conduct of the barons in their manner of obtaining the confirmation of their charter from

^{*} P. 255. Which is here given at the end of the Hiftory. K. JOHN.

K. JOHN. The reflitution of Magna Charta vot may call it, for the birth of it you fee it was not. What I have recited is undoubted hiftory and record, and clear matter of fact. And I have confined myfelf only to these three last years, in which the barons were in purfuit of this bufinefs. and took the quickeft fteps towards it: and above all, were put into a right method by the advice of STEPHEN LANGTON, the archbishop, to claim their eftate with the writings of it in their hand. For above a dozen years before, in the third of this King's reign upon a fummon of his to the earls and barons to attend him with horfe and arms into Normandy, they held a conference together at Leicefter, and by general confent they fent him word, " That unlefs he would render " them their rights and liberties, they would " not attend him out of the kingdom." But that impotent demand of their liberties, by the by, did them no good, but exposed them to ftill more and more intolerable oppreffions. They fhould have gone to him according to their fummons, they should not have fent. Not to mention that his faith was plighted by the archbishop HUBERT, WILLIAM lord marshal earl of PEMBROKE, GEOFFREY FITZ-PETER, chief jufficiary of England, (whom he fent as his commiffioners to proclaim

MAGNA CHARTA 15

claim and keep the peace immediately after the death of his brother RICHARD) " That the earl " JOHN would reftore all men their rights."

THIS was done at an affembly of the peers at Northampton, before his coming out of Normandy to be crowned. "Sub tali igitur conven-" tione comites & barones comiti JOHANNI fide-" litatem contra omnes homines iuraverunt." Upon these terms, and no otherwise, the barons fwore fealty to him: which made K. JOHN fo much rejoice at GEOFFREY FITZ-PETER's death. and fwear, " That then, and not before, he was " king and lord of England." For, from thenceforward, fays PARIS, he was more at liberty to contravene his oaths and covenants, which with this GEOFFREY he had made fore against his will; and loofe himfelf from the bonds of the peace he had entered into. Now these pacts and covenants are clearly that before his coronation, which I have just now recited, and at this parliament at St. Alban's, anno 1213, not a year before this great man's death. Where the King's peace was publicly declared to all his people; and it was ftrictly commanded, on the King's behalf, "That " the laws of his great grandfather, HENRY I. " fhould be kept by the whole realm, and all un-" juft

" just laws abolished." In both these affairs he transacted for the king, having in this last, together with the bishop of Winchester, the government of the kingdom committed to him, the King being then absent, on his way to France.

Thus the barons at last have their long lost rights reftored and confirmed, to the universal joy of the nation: but this is foon overcaft. For King JOHN immediately refolves to undo all that he had done, being prompted thereto, not only by his own arbitrary and tyrannical difpofition, but alfo by his foreign mercenaries, whom he had long made his favourites and confidents, while he looked upon his own natural fubjects as abjects The Flanders Ruyters, or cavaliers, who now by Magna Charta were expressly, and by name, ordered to be expelled the kingdom, as a nuifance to the realm; these being grown his faucy familiars, fo followed him with derifion and reproaches, " For unkinging himfelf by thefe conceffions, " and making himfelf a cypher, and our fovereign " lord of no dominions, a flave to his fubjects," and the like, that they made him flark mad: and being given over to rage and revenge, he privately retires to the Isle of Wight, where, as PARIS fays, he provides himfelf of St. Peter's two

MAGNA CHARTA,

two fwords. He fends to the pope, whom he bribes with a large fum of money, befides his former furrender of the kingdom, to cancel and annul Magna Charta, and to confound it with his apoftolical authority; and withal, to excommunicate the barons for it: and at the fame time he fends the bifhop of Worcefter lord chancellor of England, the bifhop of Norwich, and feveral other perfons, to all the neighbouring countries, to gather together all the foreign forces they could, by promifes of lands and poffeffions; and if need were, to make them grants under the great (cal, and to bring them all to Doyer by Michaelmas,

THIS three months he fpent incognito, in and about the Ifle of Wight, coafting and fkulking about, and fome times exercifing piracy out at fea; fo that it was not then known where he was, nor what was become of him; but thus he whiled away the time, contemplating his treafon, and waiting for the incomprehenfible enemy-friends he had fent for. I know not whether this defertion, and not providing for the government in his abfence, and fending the great feal of Engiand, upon fuch an errand, out of the realm, may not, with fome men, amount to a modern abdication: but I am fure that this, which fol-D lows, is enough to justify the expulsion of a whole race of Tarquins. After Michaelmas he failed to Dover to meet his outlandish fcum, with which he invades his own kingdom. Such an execrable desperate crew never set foot upon Englift ground, fo fitted for mischief, and that thirsted after nothing more than human blood, whom his agents had drawn together out of Poictou, Gafcony, Lovain, Brabant, Flanders, and weeded all the neighbouring continent for them. These made up a valt army, notwithstanding the shipwreck of Hugh, be Boyes, who was bringing forty thousand more, befides women and children, who all perished in a storm betwixt Calais and This freight of women and children, . Doven feveral of whom were afterwards driven ashore in their cradles, were intended to plant the two counties of Norfolk and Suffolk, after the extirpation of the English; for it is faid, that this HUGH had a charter of inheritance given him of thefe two provinces.

But with these forces he had, he overun England and wasted it with fire and fword in such a manner, as no Englishman can read the history of it without being in pain and torment. There is such a scene in Matt. Paris, p. 276. as was never scene

feen again, unless in the French and Irish massar, cres: it looks like hell broke loofe. For these Satellites Satanæ, the Devil's life-guard, as Matt. Paris calls them, feemed to have prepenfed malice against mankind; and being led on "a cru-" deli rege, imò cruento tyranno," by a cruel King, nay, it was a bloody tyrant; no furies could put innocent people in cold blood, of all ages and conditions, to more exquisite tortures, nor sport themfelves more in making havoc and defolation than they did. And with this horrid rayage he over-run England, and proceeded as far as Berwick in half a year's time; all the caftles of the barons falling to him, either furrendered, or for the most part abandoned.

In the mean time, most of the barons were at London, where we left them, making holiday for the grant of Magna Charta, and pleafing themfelves, that after fo long oppreffion and Ægyptian bondage, the liberties of England were reftored again in their days. They thought, likewife, that Gop had touched the King's heart, and he was become a new man, and meant the good faith he had fworn; and flattered themfelves that he would, from henceforward, inviolably observe their charters. But they were interrupted D_2 in

in this thought by the private intelligence they had, that he had given orders to his foreigners, it whom his foul trufted, to fortify and furnish his caftles with men and provisions, and to store them with all manner of artillery; but to do it to warily, that it might not come to the knowledge of the barons. This boded no good; for here was Magna Charta concerning the expulsion of foreigners broken already: and therefore, fome of the barons went to the King at Windfor, to know more of this matter, and to try, by gentle and wholefome advice, to bring him to a better mind. He received them with a blithe countenaffice, and thereby palliated the inward venom: and fwearing by Gop's feet, he affured them, that he had no ill purpofe, and bantered and laughed them out of their flory. Nevertheles, before they left him, they gathered fuch marks of his aversion to them, and that all was not well, that they went back to London lamenting, and faying, "Woe to us and to all England, which " wants a King that will fpeak truth, and is voppreffed by a falle underhand tyrant, that ufes " his utmost endeavours to subvert a miserable " kingdom."

THA

MÁGNA CHARTA. 21

THE very night after this conference with the barons, it was, that he stole away from Windsor to the Isle of Wight, and there laid his hellish plot against the nation : which was so deep, that it did not enter into the hearts of the barons to fuspect or imagine. They had now recovered the rights of the nation, which was nothing but their own, and had been most unjustly detained from them : and they never intended to have, nor fought for, But, becaufe the King went away in a bad more. mind, and because they had certain notice that nothing but their departure from London was wanted in order to furprife it; they therefore adjourned their tournament, which they had before appointed on the Monday after the feast of St. Peter and St. Paul at Stanford, to be held the Monday fevennight after at Hounflow, near London, both for the fafety of the city and their own. This they certified in their letter to WILLIAM ALBI-NET, who was gone down to his caftle of Beauvoir, and withal defired him by all means to make one at it, and to come up well provided with horfes and arms, that he might win honour. For he who performed beft was to have a bear, which a certain lady would fend to the tournament. With fuch frivolous and idle actions, fays Matthew Paris.

Paris, did they entertain themfelves; little knowing what cunning fnares were laid for them.

STILL they remained at London: and. for want of better employment, spent their time vet more vainly, in eating and drinking, and fitting up all night at the expensive dye, which however does not look like plotting; for, if they had been fo minded, it had been eafy for them, in the King's abfence, to have taken very great advantages against him. But they, meaning no hurt, had reafon to expect none; and therefore the invation after Michaelmas fell fuddenly upon them like a tempeft or HUGH DE Boves's ftorm. And being wholly unprovided to refift fuch an inundation as this, they thought the best way to put fome stop to it. would be by prefently throwing in a good garifon into the caftle of Rochefter, that the King might not come immediately to befiege London. Accordingly they make choice of WILLIAM D' ALBINET who was just come from his own caftle, and a noble band of feven-fcore knights with their retinue for this fervice. When they came thither, they found nothing but bare walls, neither provision, nor arms, nor any thing but what they had brought along with them; infomuch that many of the noblemen repented their coming down.

MAGNA CHARTA. 22

down, and would have returned: but WILLIAM D'ALBINET over-perfuaded them to ftay, and told them it would be diffionourable to defert what they had undertaken. They therefore got together what provision they could out of the town in that fhort fpace, for within three days the King and his army were with them, and had blocked them up. There they behaved themfelves like great men; but the fiege lafting long, they were fo straitened for provisions, that they were forced at last to eat their horses. Being thus in distress, the barons at London, though with the lateft. remembered their oath, to relieve them in cafe they were befieged, and marched out with a pompous army as far as Dartford; but there the gentle fouth-wind met them, and blew in their faces and though it used not to be troublefome to any body elfe, yet it drove them back, as if it had been drawn fwords, to their known den at London. This fcoffing reafon is all that Matthew Paris will give for their fhameful retreat, and deferting their companions; but no doubt, it was fome panic fright from the reports of the country, concerning the numbers and condition of the King's army: for he himfelf elfewhere tells us, That they were fuch as ftruck a terror into every body that beheld them. This piece of cowardice makes

makes the King infult, and push on the fiege with the greater fury, which only loft him the more men: for they defended themfelves to a miracle, and loft but one knight during the whole fiege. But at last their provision failed them: and, when they had not one morfel left, on St. Andrew's day, they all went out and furrendered themfelves to mercy. The King immediately ordered them, barons and all, to be hanged up, But in this, SAVARICUS DE MALLOLEONE, who was himfelf a nobleman, withftood him to the face, and told him, that as yet, it was but a young war, and no body knew what the chances of it might be: it might be his hap, or any nobleman's elfe, to fall into the hands of the barons, who would be taught, by this example of his, how to use them; and that no body would ferve him upon those terms. With much ado the King yielded to his advice, though it was likewife the opinion of all the wifest about him: and fo he fent WILLIAM ALBINET, and many others. to be kept close prisoners in Corf caftle, others to Nottingham and other prifons, but gratified his cruelty in hanging up their fervants,

ONE day, during this fiege, the King and SAVARIC were viewing the caftle, to difcover where

MAGNA CHARTA.

where it was weakeft. The beft markiman that WILLIAM D'ALBINET had, knew him, and faid, " My lord, may it pleafe you, shall I now kill " the King, our bloody enemy, with this dart. " which I have here ready?" " No, no," fays he. " you wicked glutton; God forbid that we " fhould procure the death of the LORD's anoint-" ed!" Says the other, " If it were your cafe, he " would not fpare you." Says WILLIAM, "God's " will be done, Gop shall dispose of that, not " I." Herein, fays Matthew Paris, he was like DAVID fparing SAUL, when he could have killed This paffage was not unknown to the him. King, and yet, for all that, he would not fpare him when he was his captive, but would have hanged him if he had been fuffered to do it.

AFTER the fiege of Rochefter caftle, where the flower of the barons was loft, King JOHN, notwithftanding, did not think fit to attempt London (where, though the barons did not judge themfelves able to take the field, yet were defperately refolved to live and die together) but he marched to St. Alban's, and the 20th of December divided his army into two; one of which he himfelf led to lay wafte with fire and fword northwards; the other he left to do as much for all E

25

the neighbouring counties about London, and to be fure to keep that place blocked up. He. with his army, lay the first night at Dunstable; but after a little reft, he was fo intent upon his bufinefs, that before day he marched toward Northampton, and carried fuch a Christmas into those parts, as they never had feen. For befides his plundering and deftroying all the houses, parks, and poffeffions of the barons, his manner was ftill, as he went along, to order his incendiaries to fire the hedges and villages, which could not be turned into plunder, " That he might refresh " his fight with the damages of his enemies;" Matt. Paris, recalling that word, " If," fays he, " they are to be called his enemies, who were " only willing to introduce him into the way of " justice and humanity." They were, indeed, his best friends in it, but they paid very dear for that good office.

For before this, the fpiritual fword came likewife brandifhing out against them, and they were run through and through with the pope's excommunications. He first iffued out a general excommunication against them, which they did not mind, nor think themselves concerned in, as being not named in it, nor indeed defcribed. For they were

MAGNA CHARTA

were none of the difturbers of the peace that were there mentioned, who turned the kingdom upfide down, and were worfe than the Saracens, for endeavouring to expel their crofs-bearing King from his realm (which they had never attempted nor intended) who, as he had engaged himself, fo it was to be hoped he would accordingly go and fuccour the holy land. And therefore the pope was forced to curfe them over again by name; and reciting fome of the principal of them, he involved all their partakers and adherents in the fame condemnation; and to make fure work. he laid the city of London under an interdict. As for their poor charter, that was very fhort-lived : for it bears date June 15, and was made void and difannulled by the pope the Bartholomew-day following. The barons, indeed, defpifed all these fwaggering proceedings of the pope against them, as knowing that the cauflefs curfe will never come, and alledging, that it was all upon falle fuggeftions. and that he usurped an authority in matters which did not lie before him. " For who made " him a judge, or divider of inheritances?" A power which St. Peter never had, and which his humble mafter declined when it was offered But though this pontifical ware was rehim. garded at London as it deferved, where the pre-E 2 lates

27

lates likewife did not think fit to publish it, yet in that superstitious age it could not fail to influence weak minds, when all the subjects of England were enjoined to be aiding to King JOHN against the barons, for the remission of their fins. For who that had a foul to fave, would not kill a baron if he could? It was King JOHN's holy war. And it muss strangely heighten and animate his infolent crew, to fee themselves thus backed with divine authority, and would make them play the Devil in GoD's name. Thus the fword helped the fword, and the spiritual one whetted and fet an edge upon the material.

IT was the mifery of the barons to have their country over-run in this manner, and not be in a condition to help it. As for their own loffes, they did not mind them. When meffengers came thick with bad tidings, that their caftles and poffeffions were gone and deftroyed, they only looked upon one another, and faid, "The LORD gave, and the "LORD hath taken away." When they heard how their wives and daughters were abufed, they vented themfelves by inveighing bitterly "Againft the pope and his moft dearly beloved "fon in CHRIST, JOHN." But when they thought of England, England, then they lamented indeed, and

and laid the ruin of it deeply to heart. And refolving to have done with fuch a barbarous tyrant, and to chufe a new King; after fome debate, they unanimously agreed upon Lewis, the dauphin of France. Their main reason was, because the most of K. JOHN's army being subjects of France, upon the first appearance of LEWIS, they would be apt to join him, and leave K. JOHN, whereby of neceffity he would be foon brought to reason, and in all probability, it would be a very fhort war. LEWIS readily accepted their offer, and came over upon the fecurity of twentyfour of the principal barons' fons for hoftages; and being joyfully received at London by the barons, had homage and fealty fworn to him. and he himfelf fwore "To reftore them their " good laws, and their loft inheritances." After which. he wrote to the King of Scotland to come and do him homage, and to all the great men of England to come and do the like, or elfe immediately depart the kingdom. Upon which, the earls of Warren, Arundel, Salifbury, K. JOHN's brother, and the earl marshal's fon, with many others, readily obeyed this fummons, and left K. JOHN, as did his foreigners, all but the Poitovins; fome of them returning home with their spoils, and the reft coming over to the dauphin. FROM

29

FROM the first arrival of LEWIS. K. JOHN never flood his ground; and though he came with his great army to Dover to hinder his landing, yet he durft not truft that army to engage, but leaving a ftrong garrifon in Dover caftle, he took a run to Guilford, and from thence to Winchefter without flopping: whereby he both gave LEWIS a free paffage to London to join the barons, and alfo loft most of his new conquests in less time than he gained them. But the King of France undervalued all his fon's fucceffes, fwearing that he had not gotten one foot of ground in England till he was poffeffed of Dover caftle, which made him undertake a vigorous, though fruitlefs fiege of that place: where, in a fhort time, the King of Scotland came and did him homage,

BUT, while the dauphin was engaged in that fiege, there happened an accident which altered the whole fcene of affairs. The vifcount of Melun, a nobleman of France, who came over with LEWIS, fell very fick at London. And, finding himfelf at the point of death, he fent for fome of the barons of England, who were left to take care of the city, to come to fpeak with him; to whom he faid, "I am grieved for you, at the "thoughts of your defolation and deftruction, "because

MAGNA CHARTA. 31

" because you are wholly ignorant of the perils " that hang over your heads; for LEWIS has " taken an oath, and fixteen earls and barons of " France with him, that, if ever he get England, " and be crowned King, he will condemn all the " barons that are now in arms with him against " K. JOHN, to perpetual banishment, as traitors " against their fovereign lord, and will extirpate " the whole race of them out of the land. And " left you should doubt of the truth of this, I " that lie here ready to die, do affirm to you " upon the peril of my foul, that I myfelf was " one of those that were engaged with LEWIS in " this oath. Wherefore I now counfel you, by all " means, to look carefully to yourfelves hereafter, " and to make the best use of what I have told " you, and to keep it under the feal of fecrecy." When this nobleman had thus faid, forthwith he expired. When this dying fecret came to be fpread amongst the rest of the barons, they were fadly caft down, finding themselves furrounded with difficulties, and perplexed on every fide. For. as a concurrent proof of what viscount Melun had faid, LEWIS, inftead of reftoring them to their rights, according to his oath, had given all the lands and caftles of the barons, as fast as he won them, to his own Frenchmen: and though the barons

barons grumbled at this, yet they could not prevent it. But what they laid most to heart was, that he had branded them as traitors. They were excommunicated every day, and despoiled of all terrene honour, and driven to all extremities of body and soul. In this miserable perplexity, many of them thought of returning and reconciling themselves to K. JOHN, but that the breach was too wide. They were plainly at their wits end, and were willing to do any thing to be rid of this perjured and perfidious foreigner, who had thus ungratefully entered into a desperate confpiracy against them.

DURING this tedious fiege of Dover caftle, where LEWIS and many of his barons were fure to be maintained, K. JOHN, who had been dodging up and down, took this opportunity of making a terrible inroad into the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk, where he made his ufual progrefs northward: as if he had taken up a refolution to live and die in his calling. For one of the laft things he did before he fickened, was burning to afhes all the flacks of corn as he went along, in all the mannors of the abbot of Croyland, which were but juft inned that harveft. He was first indifposed at Swinshed abby, but his illnefs increasing,

22

increasing, he could hardly reach Newark caftle; and there, by the advice of the abbot CROESTOUN, he confelled, and received facrament. After which, he appointed his eldeft fon HENRY, his heir, and ordered the realm to five ar to him, and fent his letters under his feal to all the fheriffs and caftellans of the kingdom to be attendant on him. Just when he was dying, there arrived melfengers from forme of the barons, about forty of them, with letters to be reconciled to him; but he was not in a condition to mind fuch affairs.

In ten days time after K. JOHN's death, that party which had adhered to him, with GUALLO the pope's legate, made hafte to crown his fon at And becaufe he was not yet ten Gloucefter. years old, and fo no ways concerned in the detefted cruelties of his father, and might be used as an expedient to drive out an already hated and infolent foreigner, he was prefently accepted by the kingdom; while on the other hand, upon the first knowledge of K. JOHN's death, LEWIS had, in his own conceit, wholly fubdued and fwallowed up the kingdom : but he found the contrary in fummoning Dover cafile upon this occasion, thinking to have had the caftle for his news; for he met with such a resolute denial as he took for

F

_. . ش... .

Digitized by Google

an

34

an anfwer, and broke up the fiege. Afterwards he took fome few places; but the young King's party still increasing, and many of the barons, by degrees, falling from him, and the forces he had fent for out of France being utterly defeated at fea. and all funk or taken, and he and the barons that were with him being closely befieged in the city of London, he was forced to come to this composition: " That Lewis and all his foreigners " fhould depart the kingdom, and that he fhould " never lay claim to it hereafter, but reftore " what belonged to the King in France, and to " have fifteen thousand marks for his voyage." And on the other hand, the King, the legate, and the great marshal, being protector, fwore, " That " they would reftore to the barons, and all others " of the realm, all their rights and inheritances, " with all those liberties which they had before " demanded, for which the war had begun be-" twixt K. JOHN and the barons." This composition was made by both parties in an island in the Thames, near the town of Stains, September 11, A. D. 1217.

So that within two years and three months Magna Charta had been granted, and deftroyed, and damned by the pope; and revived, and renewed

MAGNA CHARTA. 25

newed again by fresh oaths, and that even of the pope's legate.

I SHALL very briefly shew what fate it had in the reign of HENRY III. for I do not remember any fighting about the confirmation of it in any fucceeding reign ; wherein I fhall only recite the matter of fact, referving the matter of right till afterwards.

In the fifth year of his reign he was crowned again at Westminster; and three years after, which' was the eighteenth of his age, at a parliament at London, he was defired by the archbishop and the other lords to confirm the liberties and free cuftoms for which the war was first moved against his father. And, as the archbishop evidently shewed, the King could not decline the doing of it; because, upon the departure of LEWIS out of England, he himfelf had fworn, and all the nobility of the realm with him, that they would observe all the faid liberties. and have all others observe them. Upon which, WILLIAM BREWER, who was one of the privy council, made answer in behalf of the King, faying, " The liberties you de-" fire ought not in justice to be observed, becaufe " they were extorted by violence." Which speech the

F 2

• 36

HISTORY OF

the archbishop taking very ill, rebuked him: "WILLIAM, quoth he, if you loved the King, "you would not be a hindrance to the peace of "the kingdom." But the King, feeing the archbishop going to be very angry, faid, "We have "all of us form to these liberties, and we are all bound to observe what we have foorm." And, forthwith taking advice upon it, fent his letters to the sheriff of every county, to cause twelve knights or legal men to make an inquisition upon oath what were the liberties of England in the time of K, HENRY, his grandfather, and to make him a return of it by a certain day.

THIS vowing, and afterwards making inquiry was ill referted, and was one of the falls thifts which were to peculiar to that prince. The motion of the archbithop was to manifeldly needfary for the fettling the young King in his throne, that our hiftorian DANIEL, fays, it was impiaully appugned by WILLIAM BREWER: and, indeed, the reflexions he makes on the whole paffage are very remarkable from the pen of a coursier. I only obferve, that WILLIAM BREWER was the fittest interpreter of an arbitrary prince's mind; for he was an old arbitrary infrument, and one of King JOHN's generals in his barbarous invation: and though

MAGNA CHARTA 37

shough he himfelf had fince for to Magna Charta, that made no matter; for fuch falfe changes and conversions always turn cat again, as foon as they find game, and fpy a moule.

THE next year the King being declared by the pape's bull of full age, and LEWIS being now King of France, and keeping pofferfion of all the King's dominions beyond the feas, at a parliament held at Westminster, he defired a fifteenth for the recovery of them. And though many of the earls and barons had thereby loft their inheritances as well as the King, yet the whole affembly agreed in this answer: "That they would " freely grant the King what he defired, but upon " condition, if he would grant them their long " defired liberties." The King, out of coveroufnefs of this aid, has charters prefently written and fealed, and fent to all the counties, and an oath in writing, for all men to fwear to them; while RICHARD, the King's brother, because they had hitherto been ill kept, cried out they were cozening charters.

MATTHEW PARIS fays, he therefore forbears to recite the tenor of these charters, because he had done it before in K. JOHN'S reign, for the charters

charters of both Kings were alike. "In nulle "inveniuntur diffimiles."

Two years the land refted, enjoying their liberties which were punctually kept, till the King at a parliament at Oxford declared himfelf to be of full age, and took that occafion to have a new feal, and to cancel the charter of the forefts, as granted in his minority, and to caufe all that would enjoy the benefit of that charter, to take out particular charters under his new feal: for which they paid exorbitant fines, fuch as his chief jufticiary pleafed.

UPON this, and a great oppreffion of his brother RICHARD foon after, the earls and barons were up in arms, and had drawn together a great body of men at Stanford; from whence they fend him a meffage *in very big words*, That he, forthwith, make amends to his brother for the injury done him, the fault of which they lay upon the jufficiary; and that he fhould immediately reftore the charters of the foreft which he had cancelled at Oxford, and fend them to them fealed, grievoufly denouncing, "That otherwife they would com-" pel him with their fwords," Whereupon, he called

MAGNA CHARTA

called a parliament to Northampton, and gave them full fatisfaction for their demands.

Six years after, the barons had an outrageous violation of Magna Charta to complain of, and an intolerable grievance to the nation: For the King had not only filled the offices of his court with Poitovins, to the great oppreffion of his natural fubjects, but also had invited in two thoufand Poitovins and Britons, with which he garrifoned his caftles. Upon this, earl RICHARD, the marshal of the kingdom, taking several of the tords along with him, went boldly to the King. and openly reproved him, that because by evil counfel he had called in Poitovin foreigners to the oppreffion of his realm, and natural born fubjects of the realm, of their laws likewife and liberties; wherefore he humbly befought the King that he would speedily reform such abuses as these. which were the imminent deftruction of his crown and realm. Moreover he affirmed, that if the King refused this proceeding, both he and the reft of the noblemen of the kingdom would for long continue to withdraw themselves from his councils, as he conforted with foreigners. To this, PETER, bishop of Winchester, who was prime minister, made answer, That is was very lawfin

B HISTÓRY OF

lawful for our lord the King to call in what foreigners he pleafed for the defence of his kingdom and crown, and even fuch and fo many as might be able to compel his proud and rebellious fubjects to their duty. The earl marshal and the lords went away very much diffatisfied with this answer, and promised to one another that in this cause, which concerned the whole nation, they would manfully fight it out to the separation of their souls from their bodies.

In the mean while, the bifhop of Winehester and his accomplices had fo far perverted the King's heart to hate and despife the English nation, that he studied the extirpation of them all manner of ways, and by a few at a time, invited over fo many legions of Poitovins, that they almost filled all England; with troops of which, wherever the King went, he still was walled in and environed. Nor was any thing done in the kingdom but as the bifhop of Winchefter and this rout of Poitovins ordered it. The King then calls a parliament to meet on Midfummer-day at Oxford, but the aforefaid affociated lords would not come at his fummons, partly for fear of the lying in wait of these foreigners, and partly out of the indignation which they conceived against the King

MAGNA CHARTA.

King for calling in aliens in contempt of them: upon this, it was judicially decreed, that they fhould be fummoned twice and thrice, to try whether they would come or no. Here at this affembly at Oxford, ROGER BACON, while he was preaching the word of Gop before the King and the bifhous, told him roundly. That he would never enjoy any fettled peace, unlefs he removed the bishop of Winchester and PETER BIVALLIS from his councils. And when others who were prefent protefted the fame thing, the King began a little to recollect himfelf, and incline to reafon, and fignified to the affociated barons that they fhould come to a parliament July 11, at Westminster, and there, by their advice, he would rectify what was fit to be amended. But when the barons had heard that many freebooters were called in by the King with horfes and arms, and that they had arrived by degrees, and but a few at a time, and could fee no footfteps of peace, but likewife fuspected the innate treachery of the Poitovins, they let alone going to the parliament; but they fent him word by folemn meffengers, That fetting afide all delay, he fhould remove the bifhop of Winchefter and all the Poitovins from his court: But, in cafe he would not, they all by the common council of G the

4I

the kingdom would expell him and his evil oounfellors out of the realm, and proceed to the creation of a new King.

THE king was ftruck with this meffage, and the court were very much concerned at it, fearing left the error of the fon fhould be worfe than his father's, who was very near heing driven out of his kingdom, and making good the name which was given him by a kind of prefage of JOHN the Exile. But bishop PETER gave the King advice to make war upon these rebellious fubjects, and to beftow their caftles and lands upon the Poitovins, who might defend the realm of England from his traitors; bragging that he both could and would give deep and not fcoundrel counfel : for time was when he had governed the emperor's counthe east. and that his wifdom was cil in formidable both to the Saracens and to other nations. So the king, returning again to the wrong, first wreaked his anger upon GILBERT BASSET, whom, having feized a manor of his and he coming to claim his right, he called traitor, and threatened if he did not get out of his court to have him hanged. And he like_ wife commanded RICHARD SEWARD a warlike knight,

MAGNA CHARTA

knight, that had married this GILBERT's fifter or niece without his licence, as he faid, to be taken And indeed being jealous of all the other up. noble and powerful men of the kingdom, he required hoftages of them, fuch and fo many as might fatisfy him that they would not rebel.

To the parliament at Westminster, August 1. the earls and barons came armed, and the earl marshal was on his way coming to it; but going to lodge at his fifter's house who was wife to RICHARD the King's brother, fhe advertifed him of his danger, and that he would be feized. He being a man of a noble breaft, could not readilv believe woman's talk till fhe made it out; and then night coming on he rode another way, and never drew bit till he came well wearied into Wales. There were many earls and barons at this parliament, but there was nothing done in it because of the absence of the earl marshal, GILBERT BASSET, and fome other lords.

AFTER this, the King, by the advice of the bifhop of Winchester, gave fummons to all that held of him by knight fervice, to be ready with their horfes and arms at Gloucester, a week before affumption-day. And when the earl marfhal G 2

41

44 HLSTORY OF

thal and many others that were affociated with him, would not come at that appointed time. the King, as if they had been traitors, caufed their houses to be set on fire, their parks and ponds to be deftroyed, and their caffles to be befieged. These that were faid to be affociated were very noble perfons, and there were many others no mean men that adhered to them : all thefe did King HENRY caufe to be proclaimed outlaws and banished men, without the judgment of his court and of their peers, and gave their lands to the Poitovins, and thereby adding forrow to forrow, and redoubling their wounds. He gave commandment likewife that their bodies should be feized wherever they could be found within the realm.

In the mean time, bifhop PETER does what he can to weaken the marfhal's party, and corrupted the earls of Chefter and Lincoln with a thoufand marks (cheap lords !) to leave the marfhal and the caufe of juffice, and to be reconciled to the King and to be of his fide. For as for RICHARD the King's brother, he was gone off from the marfhal fome time before. When the marfhal had heard all this, he entered into a confederacy with LEWELLIN prince of Wales, and and other peers of that country, who fwore none of them would make peace without the other. Within a week's time after the appointed rendezvous at Gloucester, there arrived at Dover many armed men from the parts beyond the fea, and BALDWIN DE GYSNES with a force out of Flanders, who came to the King at Gloucester. This force, with what he had before, made a numerous army, with which he advanced to Hereford.

AFTER this, the King, by the advice of bifhon PETER. fends a defiance to the marshal by the bishop of St. David's, and thereupon marches to make war upon him, and lays fiege to one of his caftles. But when he had furioufly affaulted it many days in vain, and his army wanted provisions, fo that there was a necessity of raifing the fiege, the King grew ashamed of his enterprize: whereupon he fent feveral bishops to the earl marshal to defire him to fave the King's honour; and, that he might not be thought to have made a fiege to no purpofe, to furrender him the caftle-upon these conditions : First, that he would after fifteen days reftore to the earl marshal the caftle again entire, and in the fame state it was. And fecondly, that in the mean time he would reform and amend all things that were amils in the

45

the kingdom, by the advice of the bifhops, who were his fureties for the performance of thefe things. And to perfect and complete all this, the King appointed the marfhal and the banifhed lords to come to a parliament, which he meant to hold at Weftminfter the first week after Michaelmas.

WHEN the fifteen days were out, from the time of the marshal's furrender of his castle into the King's hands, upon condition, that after that term he fhould have it reftored to him again, the marshal fent to the King, to defire him to deliver him back his caftle according to the covenant, of which he made the bishop of Winchefter and STEPHEN SE-GRAVE the jufficiary his furcties, which likewife they had confirmed by taking an oath. But the King answered with indignation, that he was fo far from reftoring him that caftle, that he would fooner fubdue all the reft he had. When therefore the marshal faw that there was no faith, nor oath, nor peace kept by the counfellors of the King, he gathered an army and befieged his own caftle, and with little ado won it. The King was, at this time, holding his parliament as he had promifed his great men, that by their advice he might redrefs those things which were amifs; but the evil counfel he then followed, did not fuffer it.

it to be done. Though many that were there prefent, humbly befought him for God's fake that he would make peace with his barons and nobles. And other perfons in favour with the King, namely, the friars, predicants, and minorites, whom he used to reverence and hearken to. these earnestly exhorted him, that he would study to carry himfelf lovingly as he ought to do towards his natural fubjects, whom without judgment of their peers he had driven into banishment, burned their manor-houses. cut down their woods, deftroyed their ponds; and being led and miffled by the bad counfel of bad men, fets afide his lieges whofe native blood would never fuffer them to warp, and prefers other whiffling people before them; and, which is worfe, calls those traitors by whom he ought to order the peace and counfels of the realm, and fettle all affairs. To this the bifhop of Winchefter made answer, that the peers of England are not as they are in France: and therefore the King may judge and condemn and banish any of them by his own justices of his own appointing. The bishops hearing this, as it were with one voice, bgan to threaten that they would excommunicate the principal of the King's evil counfellors by name; and they named the bishop himself as the ring-leader of them, and

and his kinfinan RIVALLIS, the jufficiary, and the treafurer. 'To whom the bifhop anfwering, alledged, that he was confectated bifhop at Rome by the pope, and was exempted from their power, and appealed to the apoftolic fee. And fo the bifhops only excommunicated in general all those that 'had or fhould alienate the King's heart from his natural fubjects of the realm, and all that fhould difturb the peace of the realm.

In this parliament the King had tidings that the earl marshal had taken his caffle in Wales, and killed feveral of his knights and fervants. At which the King was much incenfed, and commanded the bifhops to excommunicate him; but it was the answer of them all, that it would be an unworthy thing to excommunicate a man for feizing a caftle that was all his own, and for taking poffeffion of his own right. But the King ftill enraged, fummoned again all his knights with horfes and arms to Gloucefter, the the morrow after all-faints: and there he gathered a numerous army and entered Wales, breathing and panting after the deftruction of the marshal. But he, like a provident warrior, had beforehand driven away all the cattle, and withdrawn all provisions, fo that the King had no

no subfiftence for his army in those parts, but was forced to march another way, and came to the caffle of Grofmund. Where, while he fpent fome days, the marshal and his affociates fent fcouts to difcover the pofture of his army; and on Martinmas-night, all of them but the marshal, who would not invade the King, with a good army furprized the King's camp, where they fled away almost naked: and the conquerors on the. other fide would not hurt any of them nor take one prifoner, excepting two knights, who indifcretely * making refiftance were killed, rather by themfelves than by the others. But they took away all their carriages and provisions, money and arms, and fo retired again into their ftrong holds

I BELIEVE fuch a modeft victory was never read of; and Matt. Paris pleafantly calls them for witneffes of the truth of this rout, who run away and loft all they had in it: the bifhops of Winchefter and Chichefter, SEGRAVE the jufficiary, RIVALLIS the treafurer, the earls of Norfolk and Salifbury, and many more. The King, who had

* Indiferete rebellantes. H

been

been left even as good as alone amidit the enemies, when all was over, put forme of his Poltovin dragoons into his Welch garfifons to prevent incurfions, and fo returned to Gloutefter, where he kept his Christmas. But in the mean time, on St. Katherine's-day, the marfhal made a great flaughter of the Poltovins at Monmouth: and he and the banifhed lords watched the King's calles fo narrowly, that when any went out of them abroad to prey, they took nothing elfe of them for their ranform but their heads; informuch, that in a fhort time there lay dead fuch a multitude of thefe foreigners in the high-ways and other places, as infected the air.

As for the difcourfe which paffed betwixt the marshal and friar AGNELLUS, who was familiar to the King and his counfellor, and caine into Wales to tell the marshal what the King and his counfellors faid of him, and to make overtures to him, it is too long to be here inferted, but is exceedingly well worth the reading as it stands in Matt. Paris, p. 391, 392, 393. wherein the marshal makes such a folid defence of his whole proceedings, and discovers fo well a grounded zeal for the rights of his country, as is sufficient to inspire every English breast with the love of a righteous

righteous caufe. Friar AGNELLUS tells him. that the King's counfellors would have him fubmit to the King's mercy, and that, befides other reasons. it was his interest fo to do; because the King was richer and more powerful than he; and as for foreign aid, where the marshal could bring one ftranger the King could bring feven. The marshal replies " It is true, the King is richer and more powerful than I; but he is not more powerful than Gop. who is justice itself, in whom I trust in the maintenance and profecution of mine and the kingdom's right: nor do I truft in foreigners, nor will ever feek their aid, unless, which God forbid! I fhall be compelled to it by fome unexpected and immutable neceffity. And I know full well that the King can bring feven to my one; and truly, I believe in the way that he is in, he will foon bring more into the realm, than he will be able to get out again." And after he had answered many other arguments, as he might confide in the King and his counfellors, and had reckoned up many inftances of the court's treachery and breach of their oaths about Magna Charta, and in feveral other cafes, he fays, " Neither would 44 it be for the King's honour, that I fhould con-46 fent to his will, which were not fupported by " reafon; nay, therein I should do injury both H 2 to

5₽

" to himfelf and to that juffice which he ought " to maintain and exercife towards his fubjects: " and I fhould give a bad example to all men of " deferting juffice and the profecution of right, " for the fake of an erroneous will, againft all " juffice, and to the injury of the fubject; for " hereby it would appear that we had more love " for our worldly pofferfions, than for righteouf-" nefs itfelf." But I wrong the difcourfe, by fingling any particulars out of it.

THE King kept his Chriftmas at Gloucester with a very thin court, the late rout at Grofmund-caftle having fcattered them. And the morrow after, IOHN of Monmouth, a nobleman, one of the King's warriors in Wales, attempting to furprize the marshal, was entirely defeated with the loss of a great number of Poitovins and others, himfelf narrowly efcaping; which his eftate did not, for the marshal immediately burned and destroyed it. The fame did the other exiled lords by all the King's counfellors in those parts; for they had laid down, amongst themselves, this laudable and general rule, " That they would hurt " no body, nor do them any damage, but only " the evil counfellors of the King, by whom they " had been driven into banishment, and used in " the

" the fame kind." And a week after Twelftide the marshal and LEOLINE entered the King's lands, and laid them waste as far as Shrewsbury, the King and bishop PETER being still at Gloucesser; but not having strength to oppose them, they retired to Winchester. But the King's heart was so hardened against the marshal by the evil counfel that he made use of, that when the bishops admonissed him to make peace with the marshal "Who fought for the cause of justice *," he made answer, "That he never would make peace "with him, unless he would acknowledge him-"felf a traitor with a halter about his neck."

WHEN the bifhop of Winchefter and the other evil counfellors of the King faw all their meafures broken, and the Poitovins thus cut off by the marshal, despairing ever to overcome him by force of arms, they fell to plotting and laying a train for his life, which was by a letter fent into Ireland to this effect: "Whereas RICHARD, late "marshal of the King of England, for his mani-"fest treason, was, by judgment of the faid "King's court, banished the realm, and for ever "outed of all the patrimony and possibility."

* Qui pro jusiitia decertabat.

" had,

" had, and yet remains in rebellion: these are " therefore to require you, that if he should chance " to come into Ireland, you take care to feize him " and bring him to the King dead or alive; and, " for your care herein, the King grants all " the inheritance of all the late marshal's lands " and poffeffions in Ireland, which are now " failen to his difpofal, to be fhared amongst you, " And for this promife of the King to be made " good to you, we all, by whole counfel the "King and kingdom are governed, do make our-" felves furcties, provided you fail not in the pre-" mifes." This writing was directed to MAU-RICE FITZ-GERALD the King's justiciary in Ireland, and feveral other great men, and some that were liegemen to the marshal, but faithless :--- and after this writing of unheard of treason was framed, though the King knew nothing of the contents of it, yet they compelled him to put his seal; and they, to the number of eleven, put to their feals. and fo fent it over.

THIS wrought with the Irifh great men according to the wifh of the evil counfellors, for out of covetoufness, they immediately ontered into the confpiracy, and privately fent word back, "That if the King's promife were confirmed to "them

" them under the great feal, they would do their " utmost to effect the business." Whereupon, the faid counfellors with a treasonable violence, furreptitiously got the great seal from the bishop of Chichester, who did not confent to this fraud, and so fent a charter, wherein every particular man's share is expressed under the great seal. As soon as this damnable writing arrived in Ireland, the confpirators took an oath to accomplish the thing; and in order to it raised an army, wherewith they invaded his lands, and took fome of his castles, that by these injuries they might provoke him, and draw him into Ireland.

WHILE this Irifh plot went on, at Candlemas the King held a parliament at Weitminfter, where he grievoufly accufed feveral of the bifhops, and chiefly ALEXANDER of Chefter, for holding correfpondence with the marihal, and for endeavouring to depofe him from the throne of the kingdom. The faid bifhop, to clear himfelf and the reft of the bifhops, immediately excommunicated all those who had any fuch wicked thoughts against the King; and all those who flandered the bifhops in that fort, who were wholly follicitous for the King's honour and fafety. Afterward in this parliament, EDMUND, elect of Canterbury, and

and the reft of the bifhops, came to the King, condoling the defolation both of him and the kingdom; and as it were with one heart, and mind, and mouth, faid: " Our lord the King, we tell you in the name of God, as your liegemen, that the counfel you now have and ufe, is neither found nor fecure, but cruel and perilous both to you and the realm of England; We mean the counsel of PETER, bishop of Winchester, PETER RIVALLIS, and their accomplices: First, because they hate and defpife the English nation, calling them traitors, and caufing them all to be fo termed, thereby turning away your heart from the love of your nation, and our hearts and the hearts of the nation from you; as appears by the marshal, than whom there is not a better man in your land, whom, by difperfing their lyes on both fides, they have perverted and alienated from you. And by the fame counfel as their's is, your father JOHN first lost the hearts of his country, and afterwards Normandy, and other lands; exhaufted his treafure, and almost lost England, and never afterwards had peace. By the fame counfel feveral difasters have happened to yourfelf;" which they They likewife tell him, by there enumerate. the faith in which they were bound to him, that his counfel was not for peace, but for breach of peace,

57

peace, and diffurbance of the land ; that his counfellors might grow rich by the troubles of the nation and the differifon of others, which in peace they could not compais. Amongst the items of their prefent grievances, which it would be too long here to recite, this is one, " That these counfellors confound and pervert " the law of the land," which has been fworn and corroborated by excommunication; fo that it is very much to be feared that they stand excommunicated, and you for intercommuning with them." And they conclude, These things we faithfully tell you, and before God we defire, advife and admonifh you, that you remove this counfel from you: and as the cuftom is in other realms, that you manage your kingdom by your own faithful fworn fubjects, that are of your own kingdom. For we affure you, that unlefs you fpeedily redrefs and reform these grievances, we will proceed to excommunication, both against you and all other gainsayers, staying no longer than for the confectation of the archbishop elect." And when they had thus faid, the King humbly demanded a fhort truce, faying, that he could not fo fuddenly remove his council, till he had audited an account of his treafure committed to them. And fo the parliament broke up, with

58 HISTORY OF

with a confidence that peace and agreement would be had in a fhort time.

THE ninth of April there came to parliament at Westminster the king with the earls and barons, and the archbishop lately confectated with his fuffragans, that they might make fome wholefome provision for the realm, which was still in diforder. The archbishop, taking to him the bishops and the other prelates, went to the King, and laid before him the bad state and imminent danger of the kingdom, and rehearled all the grievances which they had mentioned in the last parliament; and told him plainly, that unlefs he would fpeedily rectify his error, and make peaceable agreement with his loval fubjects, he and all the prelates there would forthwith excommunicate both the King himfelf, and all that should contradict this peace and agreement. But the pious King hearing the advice of his prelates, lowly answered, " That he " would be governed by their counfels in all " things :" fo that in few days after feeing his error, and repenting of it, he difmiffed PETER of Winchefter and RIVALLIS; and expelling all the Poitovins from his court and caffles, he fent them into their own country, charging them . " never

" never to fee his face any more." And afterwards being very defirous of peace, fent ED-MUND the archbifhop, with the bifhops of Chefter and Rochefter into Wales, to LEOLINE and the marfhal, to treat of peace.

WITH LEOLINE they might treat, but the earl marshal was gone into Ireland, as it had been before projected by the evil counfellors, to take care of his caftles and possefions, which he heard were feized and spoiled: where as soon as he arrived, he was waited upon by GEOFREY MARSH his liegeman, a perfidious old man, who was one of those to whom the letter was directed, and was a fharer in the lands which were granted by charter. But having been an old fervant to his father, and pretending an extraordinary honour and affection for the marshal, he thereby had that power with him, as to lead him into all the fnares and traps which were laid for him. and which at laft cost him his life, though he fold it very dear. The ftory is too long for this place, but he fell a noble facrifice for the English liberties, though neither the first nor the last in that kind.

AFTER

60 HISTORY OF

AFTER Eafter the King being willing to meet his archbishop and bishops, whom he had fent into Wales, was going to Gloucester, and lay at his manor of Woodftock, where meffengers came to him out of Ireland with an account of the death of the earl marshal. Whereupon the King, breaking forth into weeping and lamentation, to the admiration of all that were prefent. made fad moan for the death of fo brave a knight. constantly affirming that he had not left his peer in the kingdom. And immediately calling for the priefts of his chapel, caufed an obfequy to be folemnly fung for his foul, and on the morrow after mais bestowed large alms upon the poor. Bleffed therefore is fuch a King, who knows how to love those that offend him, and merit with prayers and tears forgiveness of his faithful fubjects, whom upon falle fuggestions he had some time hated. When he came to Gloucester, EDMUND and the other bishops met him, and told him that LEO. LINE infifted upon it, as a preliminary of the peace, that the banished barons should be restored. Upon this he fummons them to a parliament at Gloucester, to which they came under the fafe conduct of the bifhops, and were reftored to all their rights. Afterwards EDMUND caufed a copy of the letter, concerning the treachery prepared for

I 2

the

the earl marshal, to be read in full parliament. at which the King and the whole affembly wept. And the King confessed in truth, that being compelled by the bifhop of Winchefter and his other counfellors, he had commanded his feal to be put to fome letters that were prefented to him; but he affirmed with an oath. " That he never heard " the contents of them." To whom the archbifhop faid, " King, fearch your confcience: for " all those that procured these letters to be fent, or " were privy to them, are as guilty of the mar-" fhal's death, as if they had killed him with their " own hands." Then the King taking advice. fummoned his ministers to answer for his treasure. and the ill use of his seal when he knew nothing of it: upon which fome took fanctuary, others abfconded, and fome fled to Rome. RIVALLIS and SEGRAVE were afterwards tried in the King's bench, where the King himfelf fitting with the judges, charged them with the particulars of their evil counfel, " and called them wicked traitors;" and they were deeply fined. And yet the next year these two were received into grace and favour again, after he had removed many of his new counfellors and officers, to the admiration of his people, and had demanded the great feal from the bishop of Chefter his chancellor with a great deal of

62 HISTORY OF

of reproof, though he had unblameably administered his office, and was a fingular pillar of truth in the court. But the chancellor refused it, faying, "That having received the feal by the common " council of the realm, he could not refign it to " any one without the like common affent."

THE miferies of the kingdom still go on, and no other can be expected from fuch a property of a prince, who fet his feal to deftroy his best fubjects blindfold, and fay his wicked counfellors compelled him to it; and after he himfelf has impeached them, and publicly blackened them with his own mouth, " and threatned to have their " eyes pulled out," takes them again into his bofom. And therefore in all the fucceeding parliametns we meet with nothing but their repeated complaints of the violations of Magna Charta, and their ineffectual endeavours to redrefs them; feigned humiliations and forrow on the King's fide, with promises of amendment, but no performance; asking for money, and then being upbraided with what he had already, and that at feveral times he had wafted eight hundred thousand pounds, fince he began to be a dilapidator and confumer of the kingdom: they gave him money once for all, and he gives them a charter never to injure them any more

more in that kind, by requiring any more aids: and fuch like transactions as thefe, till we come to Ann. Dom. 1244. when again he wants money. And then upon these following confiderations, that because the charter of liberties, which the King had long fince granted, and for the observation whereof EDMUND the archbishop had fworn and most faithfully passed his word on the King's behalf, had not hitherto been kept: and because the aids which had been granted to the King, had turned to no profit of the King or kingdom : and because of other grievances which the King promifes to redrefs, the parliament came to this refolution, " That there should be a prorogation of three " weeks, and that if in the mean time the King " fhould freely chufe himfelf fuch counfellors, and " order the rights of the kingdom as fhould be to " their content, they would then give him an an-" fwer about the aid." In these three weeks the lords drew up a provision by the King's confent, to this effect: " Concerning the liberties at ano-" ther time bought, granted and confirmed, that " for the time to come they be observed. For " the greater fecurity whereof, let a new charter " be made, which shall make special mention of " thefe things. Let those be folemnly excommu-" nicated by all the prelates, who wittingly op-" pole

6д

" pole or hinder the observation of these liberties: " and let all those have reparation made them. " who have fuffered in their liberties fince the laft " grant. And because neither by virtue of an " oath then taken, nor for fear of the holy man " EDMUND's excommunication, what was then " promifed has hitherto been kept, to avoid the " like peril for the future, left the latter end be " worfe than the beginning; let four nobles and " powerful men of the discreetest in the realm. " be chosen by affent of parliament to be of the " King's council, and to be fworn, that they will order the affairs of the King and kingdom " faithfully, and do juffice to all without refpect " of perfons. These shall follow our lord the "King, and if not all, two at least shall be pre-" fent to hear all complaints that come, and to " give fpeedy relief to those that fuffer wrong; " they shall supervise the King's treasure, that the " money given for public uses be fo applied." " And they shall be confervators of the liberties. " And because the chancellor and justiciary are to. " be frequently with the King, they being cho-" fen in parliament may be two of the conferva-" tors. And as they are chosen by the common " affent, fo they shall not be removed without the " fame, &c."

And

65

AND when (fays Matt. Paris) the great men in the receis of three weeks had diligently treated of these matters, which were so exceedingly profitable for the common-wealth; the enemy of mankind, the disturber of peace, and the raiser of division, the devil, through the pope's avarice, unhappily put a stop to the whole business. For in this nick of time, comes a legate to raise money, with new and unheard of powers; and this put all into confusion, and made work for a long time after.

Four years after this, A. D. 1248. a parlia ment meets the fennight after Candlemas at London, that they may treat diligently and effectually with our lord the king, of the affairs of the realm, which is very much difordered and impoverished, and enormously maimed in our days. The parliament, understanding that the king intended to afk an aid of money, told him that he ought to be ashamed to demand such a thing, efpecially feeing that in the laft exaction of that kind, to which the nobles of England confented with much difficulty, he gave them a charter that he would never burden nor injure them with the like again. He was likewife grievoufly reprehended, and no wonder, for calling in aliens, K and

and foolifhly fquandering the wealth of the kingdom upon them; marrying them to his wards without their confent, and feveral other of his fpendthrift and tyrannous practices. And, one and all, they grievoufly reproached him, for not having (as the magnificent Kings his predeceffors had) a jufficiary, chancellor and treafurer, by the common council of the realm, and as is fit and expedient; but fuch as follow his will, let it be what it will, fo long as it is for their own gain: and who do not feek the good of the commonwealth, but their own particular profit, by gathermoney, and getting the wards and revenues to themfelves in the firft place.

WHEN our lord the king heard this, being confounded within himfelf, he blufhed, knowing that all of thefe things were very true. He therefore promifed most faithfully, that he would readily redrefs all thefe things; hoping by this humility, though it were feigned, to incline all their hearts to grant him an aid. To whom the whole parliament, which had been often answered with fuch promises, upon advice made answer, "That it would foon be seen whether the King " will reform these things or no, and will ma-" nifestly appear in a short time. We will wait " a while

" a while with patience; and as the King fhall " carry and behave himfelf toward us, fo fhall " he have us obedient to him in all things. Therefore, all was adjourned, and refpited for a fortnight after midfummer. But in the mean time, our lord the King; whether it proceeded from his own fpirit, or that of his courtiers, who were unwilling to lofe any thing of their power, was hardened and more exafperated, and never minded to make the leaft reparation of these abuses according to his promise.

WHEN the day appointep came, the parliament came again to London, with a full belief and truft in the King's firm promife, that leaving his former errors, by the grace of GoD beftowed upon him, he would incline to more wholefome advice. As foon as they were affembled, there came this * unhandfom anfwer from the King: " All you the principal men of England, you had " a mind to bring the lord your King, to the " bent of your uncivil will and pleafure, and to " impofe a very fervile condition upon him; that " what every one of you may do at pleafure,

* Illepidum responsum. K 2

" fhould

67

68

HISTORY OF

" thould impudently be denied to him : for it is " " lawful for every body to use whose and what " counsel he will. And so it is lawful for every " mafter of a family to prefer any one of his house " to this or that office, or put him by it, or turn him " out, which you rashly presume to deny even " to your lord the King. And this prefumption s is still the greater, feeing fervants ought by no " means to judge their mafter, nor tie him to " their conditions, nor vaffals to do the like their " prince; but all inferiors whatfoever, are to " be ordered and directed by the will and plea-" fure of the lord and mafter : for the fervant is " not above his lord, as neither the disciple above " his mafter; and truly he fhould not be your king, " but may pais for your fervant, if he should be " thus brought to your will. Wherefore, neither " will he remove, nor chancellor, nor justiciary, " nor treasurer, as you have propounded to or-" der the matter; neither will he put any other " in their room." After the fame fashion, fays Matt. Paris, there was a cavilling answer to the other wholfome articles which were fufficiently for the King's interest. " But he afks of you -" an aid of money to enable him to recover his " rights in the parts beyond the feas, where-" in you yourfelves are alike concerned. When therefore

therefore the parliament had heard this. they understood clearer than the light that all this came from his prefent counfellors, whole reign would be at an end, and be blown away with a puff, if the baronage of all England might be heard. But feeing themselves craftily answered and opposed, they all rplied, as if it had been perfectly with one breath, " That they would by " no means uselefly impoverish themselves, that " aliens might be proud at their coft, and to " ftrengthen the enemies of the King and king-" dom:" of which they gave inflances in what happened lately in Poitou and Gafcony; where the King upon an expedition out of his own head, and against their advice, lost honour, treafure, lands, and wholly mifcarried. And fo the parliament broke up in the utmost indignation, every one being difappointed in the great hopes which they long had from this parliament: and they carried home nothing but, as they used to do, contemptuous usage, with loft labour and expences.

THE grievances still increase, till we come to a new confirmation of Magna Charta, A. D. 1253. which was upon this occasion. The pope, for ends of his own, follicited the King to undertake

HISTORY OF

70

dertake an expedition to the Holy Land, and for his encouragement, granted him the tenths of the revenues of England for three years. Upon this, in a very public and folemn manner, he took upon him the crofs; but fome faid that he only wore that badge upon his shoulders as a good argument to get money. And he fivore, " That after midsummer, he would begin his " journey for the following three years, unlefs " he were hindered by death, ficknefs, or fome " other reasonable impediment." This oath he took both after the fashion of a priest with his hand upon his breast, and after the manner of a layman, laying his right hand upon the book and kiffing it; and yet fays the hiftorian, the standersby were never the furer.

But though the King afterwards produced the pope's mandate, wherein by the power given him of GoD, he granted the King his tenth, yet the bifhops oppofed it as an unfufferable ufurpation; which put the King into the most frantic and impotent rage that ever was defcribed: and though afterwards he closeted them, yet he could not prevail. At last about easter a parliament was called. After fifteen days debate, the confent of the whole parliament fettled in these refolves, "That

"That they would not hinder the King's pious "intention of going to the Holy Land; nor at "the fame time fhould the church and kingdom "fuffer damage." They therefore granted the King the tenth of all church-revenues for three years, and three marks efcuage upon every knight's fee for that year. And the King on his part, promifed, that in good faith, and without any quirks and caviling pretences, he would faithfully obferve Magna Charta, and every article of it. Though it was no more than his father King JOHN had fworn to keep many years ago, and in like manner the prefent King at his coronation, and many a time after, whereby he chouled the nation of an infinite deal of money.

ACCORDINGLY, May the third, in the great hall at Weftminfter, in the prefence and with the confent of the king and the whole parliament, the archbifhop and the bifhops in their pontificals with lighted candles, paffed the fentence of excommunication against all that fhould violate the liberties of the church, and the liberties or free customs of the realm of England; and those especially which are contained in the charter of common liberties of the realm of England, and of the Forest. And the charter of King JOHN JOHN was accordingly rehearfed and confirmed. The form of the excommunication is formewhat large, as being ftrongly drawn up, and the anathemas well laid on; it is in BACON p. 131. And all the while the fentence was reading, the King laid his hand fpread upon his breaft, chufing to affift with that ceremony, and not with holding a wax-candle, to fhew, as he faid, "That his heart went along with it;" and when it was ended, he faid thefe words, "So " help me God, I will faithfully keep all thefe " things inviolate, as I am a man, as I am a " chriftian, as I am a knight, and as I am a King " crowned and anointed."

DANIEL and BACON are wonderfully taken with the manner of this confirmation of the charters; and fay, that there was never fuch a folemn fanction of laws, "fince the law was delivered at "Mount Sinai." But the renowned ROBERT GROSTHEAD, bifhop of Lincoln, divining and foreboding in his heart that the King would fly off from his covenants, immediately, as foon as he got down into his bifhopric, caufed all the breakers of the charters, and efpecially all the priefts that were fo, to be folemnly excommunicated in every parifh church throughout his diocefs,

73

diocefs, which are fo many as can hardly be numbered; and the fentence was fuch as was enough to make the ears of those that heard it to tingle, and to quail their hearts not a little.

THE parliament being thus ended, the King prefently uses the worst counsel that could be. and refolves to overthrow all that had been thus established: for it was told him, that he should not be King, at least lord in England, if the faid charters were kept; and his father JOHN had experience of it, and chose rather to die than thus to be trampled under foot by his fubjects. And these whiftherers of Satan added moreover. "Take " no care though you incur this fentence of ex-" communication: for a hundred, or for a brace " of hundred pounds the pope will abfolve you : " who, out of the plenitude of his power, what " he pleafes can either loofe or bind: for the " greater cannot command a greater than he. " You will have your tenth to a farthing, which " will amount to very many thousand marks: " and what leffening will it be of that ineftimable " fum, to give the pope a fmall driblet, who " can abfolve you though he himfelf had confirm-" ed the fentence, feeing it belongs to him to annul, who can enact; nay, for a fmall gra-" tuity L

" tuity will enlarge the term of years for the " grant of the tenth, and will throw you in a " year or two?" Which accordingly afterwards came to país, as the following narration shall declare. Here is a lost King and a lost nation: Why should we read any farther?

Two years after, having fpent most of that time in the wars in GASCONY, for to the Holy Land he never went, he calls a parliament at London upon Hoke day, which was the fulleft affembly that ever was there feen. In fhort, the King wants money, was in debt, and would have the aid from the baronies to be continued in proportion to the tenths, and fo, completing their tax, he might be bound to give them his thanks in full. This would have amounted to fuch a fum as would have empoverished the realm, and made it defenceless, and exposed it to foreigners. Upon confultation therefore, because that proposal was impoffible, they came to this conceffion, " That " they would charge and burden themfelves " much, for to have Magna Charta to be honeft-" ly kept, from that time forth hereafter, with-" out pettifogging quirks, which he had fo often " promifed, and fworn and bound himfelf to it, " under the strictest ties that could be laid upon " his

" his foul. They demanded, moreover, to chufe " them a jufficiary, chancellor, and treafurer, by " the common council of the realm, as was the " cuftom from antient times, and was just: who " likewife fhould not be removed but for mani-" feft faults, and by the common council and de-" liberation of the realm called together in par-" liament. For now there were fo many Kings " in England, that the antient heptarchy feemed " to be revived." You might have feen grief in the people's countenances. For neither the prelates nor the nobles knew how to hold fast their Proteus, I mean their King, although he should have granted them all this. Because in every thing he tranfgreffes the bounds of truth; and where there is no truth, no certainty can be had. Tr was told them likewife by the gentlemen of the bed-chamber, who were most intimate with the King, that he would by no means grant them their defire about the jufticiary, chancellor, and treasurer. Moreover, their prelates were bloodily grieved about their tenth, which they promifed conditionally, and now were forced to pay abfolutely, the church being ufed like a fervant maid. The nobles were wounded with the exaction which hung over their heads, and were bewildered.

L 2

Ат

75

76 HISTORY OF

AT last they all agreed to fend a message to the King in the name of the whole parliament, that the bufiness should be defered till Michaelmas. " That, in the mean time they might have trial " of the King's fidelity and benignity, that he " proving thus perhaps towards them and their " patience in the keeping the charter fo many " times promifed, and fo many times bought " out, might turn again and defervedly incline " their hearts towards him: and they, as far as " their power would extend, would obediently " give him a fupply." Which, when the King did not like, and by giving no answer did not agree to it, the parliament after many fruitlefs debates, day after day, from morning till night, thus broke up; and the nobles of England now made ignoble, went home [then the parliament did not live at court in those days] in the greatest defolation and defpair.

In the fame year arrived ALIENOR, the King of Spain's fifter, whom prince EDWARD had married, with fuch a retinue of Spaniards, as looked like an invafion, who, with great pomp, and all forts of public rejoicings, were received at London; though with the form and laughter of the common people at their pride. But grave perfons

fons and men of circumspection, pondering the circumstances of things, fetched deep fighs from the bottom of their hearts, to fee all strangers fo much in request, and the subjects of the realm reputed as vile, which they took for a token of their irreparable ruin. At the fame time there was the worft news that could be of a legate a latere coming over, armed with legantine power. who was ready prepared in all things to fecond the King in the destruction of the people of England, and to noofe all gainfayers and oppofers of the royal will, which is a tyrannical one, and to hamper them all in the bonds of an anathema. Moreover, it terrified both the prelates and nobles. and funk them into a bottomlefs pit of desperation, to fee that the King by fuch unfpeakable craftinefs had brought in fo many foreigners, dropping in one after another; and by degrees, had drawn into confederacy with him many, and almost all the principal men in England, as the earls of Gloucefter, Warren, Lincoln, and Devonshire, and very many other noblemen; and had fo impoverished the natural born subjects, to enrich his foreign kindred and relations, that in cafe the body of the realm fhould have thoughts of flanding for their right, and the King were against them, they would have no power to reftrain the King

King and his foreigners, or be able to contradict As for earl RICHARD, who is reckoned them. our greateft nobleman, he ftood neutral. In like manner there were others not daring to mutter or fpeak within their teeth. The archbifhop of Canterbury, who ought to be like a fhield against the affaults of the enemy, was engaged in fecular affairs beyond sea, taking little care of his flock in England. The magnanimous patriots and hearty lovers of the realm, namely, the archbishop of York, ROBERT GROSTHEAD, bifhop of Lincoln. WARIN DE MUNCHEMSIL, and many others, were dead and gone. In the mean time, the Poitovin kindred of the King with the provincials, and now the Spaniards and the Romans, are daily enriched with the revenues as fast as they arife, and are promoted to honours, while the English are repulsed.

In this lamentable flate was the nation again, within two years after the fo much magnified confirmation of their charter, which was indeed performed with the greateft folemnity poffible; for heaven and earth were called to witnefs it. The year following, though England ftill lay under oppreffion, yet the Welch were refolved to bear the tyranny no longer, but flood up for their

their country and the maintenance of their laws, and baffled feveral armies, first of the prince and afterwards of the King. They were ten thousand horfe, and many more foot; who, entering into a mutual affociation, swore upon the gospels, that they would manfully and faithfully fight to the death for the liberties of their country and their antient laws, and declared they had rather die with honour than spin out a wretched life in disgrace. At which manly action of their's, fays the historian, "The English ought defervedly to blush, "who lay down their neck to every one that fets "his foot upon it, and truckle under strangers, " as if they were a forry, diminutive, timorous, " little people, and a riffraff of fcoundrels."

Is is very hard that the English nation must, at the fame time, fuffer by the Welch in their excurfions upon our borders, and withal, be continually perfecuted by this historian, and upbraided with the Welch valour. But fo it is, that he cannot mention any English grievance, but he twits us with the Welch. BALDWIN of Rivers, by the procurement of our lady the Queen, marries a certain foreigner, a Savoyard, of the Queen's kindred. Now to this BALDWIN belongs the county of Devon; and fo day by day the noble possible procurement of our lady by day the noble

80 HISTORY DE

poffeifions of the English are devolved upon forreigners, "Which the faint-hearted English ei-" ther will not know, or diffemble their know-" ledge, whose cowardice and supine simplicity " is reproved by the Welch stoutness."

In the next paffage, we have an account of the King's coming to St. Alban's in the beginning of March, and staying there a week; where, all the while this hiftorian was continually with him at his table, in his palace, and bed-chamber; "at " which time he very diligently and friendly di-" rected this writer's pen:" fo that it is not to be expected we fhall hear any more of the Welch. And yet the fame fummer, when they baffled the King's expedition against them, he rejoices " That " their material bufinefs profpered in their hands." For he fays, that their caufe feemed to be a just cause even to their enemies. And that which heartened them most was this, that they were refolutely fighting for their antient laws and liberties; like the Trojans from whom they were descended. and with an original conftancy. " Woe to the " wretched English, that are trampled upon by " every foreigner, and fuffer their antient liber-" ties of the realm to be puffed out and extin-" guilhed, and are not ashamed of this, when " they

" they are taught better by the example of the "Welch. O England! thou art juftly reputed " the bondwoman of other countries, and be-" neath them all: what thy natives earn hardly, " aliens fnatch away and carry off!"

It is impoffible for an honeft man ever to hate his country; but if it will fuffer itfelf to be oppreffed, it juftly becomes, at once, both the pity and fcorn of every understanding man, and of them chiefly that love it best. But as we cannot hate our country, fo for the fame reason we cannot but hate such a generation of men, as for their own little ends are willing to enflave it to all posterity; wherein, they are worse than Esau, for he only fold his own birth-right for a mess of pottage, but not that of other folks too.

In the year 1258, a parliament was called to London the day after Hoke Tuesday, for great and weighty affairs; for the King had engaged and entangled himself in great and amazing debts to the pope about the king of Apulia, and he was likewise fick of his Welch war. But when the King was very urgent for an aid of money, the parliament resolutely and unanimously answered him, "That they neither would nor could . M "bear

" bear fuch extortions any longer." Hereupon he betakes himfelf to his fhifts to draw in the rich abbies to be bound for him for furns of money; but though it was well managed, he failed in it. And that parliament was prolonged and fpent in altercations between the King and the great men, till the week after Afcenfion-day: for the complaints against the King were fo multiplied daily, and the grievances were fo many, by the breach of Magna Charta, and the infolence of the foreigners, that Matt. Paris fays it would require special treatifes to reckon up the King's miscarriages. And the King being reproved for them, and convinced of the justness of the reproof, bethought and humbled himfelf, though it were late first, and faid, " That he had " been too often bewitched by wicked counfel:" but he promifed, which he likewife confirmed by an oath taken upon the altar and shrine of St. Edward, " That he would plainly and punctually " correct his former errors, and graciously com-" ply with his natural born fubjects." But his former frequent breach of oath rendered him incredible, and neither fit to be believed nor trufted. And becaufe the great men knew not as yet how to hold fast their Proteus, which was a hard and difficult matter to do, the parliament was put off to

to Barnabas-day, to be held without fail at Oxford. In the mean time, the chief men of England, namely, the earls of Gloucester, Leicester, and Hereford, the earl marshal, and other eminent men, out of a provident precaution for themfelves, affociated: and because they were vehemently associated of the treachery of the foreigners, and much sufficient the little plots of the King, they came armed with a good retinue to Oxford.

THERE the great men, in the very beginning of the parliament, confirmed their former purpofe, and immutable refolution to have the charter of the liberties of England faithfully kept and observed, which the King had often granted and fworn, and had caufed all the bifhops of England to excommunicate, in a horrible manner, all the breakers of it, and he himfelf was one of the excommunicators. They demanded likewife to have a jufficiary that fhould do equal juffice, and fome other public things, which were for the common profit of the King and realm, and tended to the peace and honour of them both. And they frequently, and urgently afked and advifed the King to follow their counfels, and the neceffary provifions they had drawn up; fwearing with pledging their faiths, and giving one another their M 2 hands.

hands, "That they would not ceafe to purfue " what they had propounded, for the lofs either " of money or lands, or for the life or death of " themfelves or their's." Which, when the King understood, he folemnly fwore, "That he would " comply with their counfels, and agree to them." And prince EDWARD took the fame oath. But IOHN, earl of Warren, was refractory, and refused it, and the King's half brothers, WILLIAM OF VALENCE, and others. Then the fea-ports were ordered to be firictly guarded, and the gates of London to be clofe kept at nights, for fear the foreigners should surprize it. And when they had fpent fome days in deliberating what was to be done in fo weighty an affair, as repairing the flate of a broken, shattered, kingdom was, they confirmed their purpofe with renewing their covenants and oaths, " That neither for death, nor life, nor " freehold, for hatred or affection, or any other " way, they would be biafed or flackened from " purging the realm, of which they and their " progenitors before them were the native off-" foring, and clearing it of an alien-born brood, " nor from the procuring and obtaining good and " commendable laws: and if any man, whoever he " be, fhould be refractory, and oppose this, they " would compel him to join with them whether " he

" he would or no." And though the King and Drince EDWARD had both fworn before, yet prince EDWARD, as he could, refused this oath. and fo did JOHN, earl of Warren. But HENRY. fon to RICHARD, King of the Romans, was doubtful and unrefolved; faying, "That he could " not take fuch an oath, unless it were with his " father's leave and advice." To whom the harons publicly made answer, "That if his father " himfelf would not agree to it, he fhould not " hold one furrow of land in England." The King's half brothers were very politive, and fwore bloodily that they would never part with any of the caftles. revenues, and wards, which their brother had freely given them as long as they breath-But while they were afferting this, and muled. tiplying oaths not fit to be rehearfed, the earl of Leicester made answer to WILLIAM DE VA-LENCE, who was more fwoln and haughty than the reft; "Know for certain, that either you " fhall give up the caftles which you have from " the King, or you shall lose your head." And the other earls and barons firmly attested the fame. The Poitovins therefore, were in a great fright, not knowing what to do: for if they fhould retire to fome caftle, wanting provisions, they would foon be starved out: "For the body of the common peo-" ple

85

" ple of the realm, without the nobles, would " befiege them, and utterly raze their caftles *." Whereupon, at dinner-time they ftole away, as if it had been to go to dinner, and took their flight to Winchefter. When the great men were advertifed, that the Poitovins had thus taken their flight towards the fea-fide, fearing, left they might be gone to bring in foreign aid, [I fuppofe they had not forgot how K. JOHN ferved his barons] they thought all delays dangerous in fuch a matter, and therefore, immediately muftered all their force to look after them.

THE barons on the 15th of July difmiffed the Poitovins, and commended them to the feas in their paffage to France, where they met with forry welcome, but at laft were fent home with a fafe conduct. But the barons took care to fend them from hence as bare as they came; for RI-CHARD GRAY, governor of Dover, by their order, feized all their money, and it was appointed to be laid out for the public uses of the realm. On the 20th of the fame month, came commisfioners of the parliament to London, and convened all the citizens, otherwise called barons,

* Univerfitas enim regni popularis, etfi non nobiles, &c.

of

of the whole city; and in the hall which is called Guildhall, they afked them if they would faithfully obey the flatutes of the parliament, and immutably adhere to them, manfully refifting all oppofers, and effectually aiding the parliament? Which, when they had all of them freely granted, they gave the commiffioners a charter of this their grant, fealed with the common feal of the city. But they did not as yet make public proclamation of these flatutes, becauses they were in confusion about the earl of Gloucester's being poisoned, and his brother, (as were feveral others) which, as appeared afterwards, was the Poitovin's farewel.

AND then, in this follicitous and weighty affair, and in this moft happy renovation and right-ordering of the whole realm, FULK, bifhop of London, was more lukewarm and remifs than became him, or was expedient; whereby he fo much the more fmutted and blackened his fame, by how much he had formerly been more generous than others. And fo the barons having repofed their hopes in his breaft, he provoked many of them to anger by his falling off, when by this means they believed they fhould fet the King right with his people. But that which frighted them beyond all things was, the King's mutability

87

lity and unfearchable doublenefs, which they perceived by a terrible word he let fall. Being one day upon the Thames in his barge, a fudden form of thunder and lightning arofe, which he dreaded above all things; and therefore immediately ordered to be fet on fhore, which happened to be at Durham-houfe, where the earl of Leicester then lay: which, when the earl underflood, he ran joyfully to meet him, and reverently faluted him according to his duty; and chearing him, faid, "You have no occafion to be con-" cerned at the tempeft, for now it is over." To whom the King replied in the greatest earnest, and with a stern countenance, " I am indeed afraid " of thunder lightning above measure; but," with a horrid oath, "I dread thee more than all " the thunder and lightning in the world." To which the earl gave a mild and gentle answer, and only let him know he had a wrong opinion of But all men did fuspect this amazing exhim. preffion proceeded from hence, that the earl had been a main man in establishing the provisions at Oxford.

THIS boded ill to those provisions, and, accordingly in a fhort time, the King fent privately to the pope, to be abfolved from his oath, whereby he

he was bound to keep them: which he eafily obtained, not only for himfelf, but for all that had taken it, whereby all those who could any way corrupt, were free to be of his party.

THE next year the King kept his Christmas at the Tower with the Queen; and being, by the inftigation and wicked counfel of fome about him, rendered wholly averfe to the covenant which he had made with his parliament, he contrived how to publish his averfion and indignation against it. In order to which, he kept his refidence in the Tower; "And having broken open " the locks to come at the treasure, which was " deposited there ab antiquo *" [which I suppose was fome antient heirlome or public flock of the kingdom, kept there as a referve against fome great emergency; for it is plain he had not the keys of it] " he brought it out to spend." After this, he hires workmen to repair and for-

* Vid. artic. 24. in depositione R. 2. Thefourum, coronas, reliquias, & alia jocalia, videlicet beha regni, qua ab entiquo dimissa fuerant in archivis regni, pro honore regis & confervatione regni sui in omnem eventum, abstulit, &c. rotulos recordorum, statum & gubernationem regni sui tangentium deleri & abradi secit, &c. there went, Habent enim ex antiquo statuto, &c. Decem. Scrip. 2752.

N

tify

Digitized by Google

tify the Tower, and orders the city of London to be put in a pofture of defence, and all the inhabitants of it from twelve years old and upwards, fwear fidelity to him; and the common crier made proclamation, "That whoever was " willing to ferve the King, fhould come away " cheerily, and enter into his pay." And then he took his time to publish the pope's bull of absolution from the oath, which was done at the Paul's-cross fermon.

UPON notice of these things, there was a great confluence of the barons from all parts, with a great strength of armed men, who came and lay in the fuburbs; for they were not fuffered to come within the city. But from thence the barons fent meffengers to the King, and humbly befought him, "That he would inviolably keep the " common oath which all of them had taken: " and if any thing displeased him, that he would " fhew it to them, that they might amend it." But, he by no means confenting to what they offered, answered harshly and threateningly, "That " because they had failed in their agreement, he " would comply with them no more, but that, " from henceforth, every one fhould prepare for " his own defence." At length, by the mediation

tion of fome perfons, the bufinefs was brought to this iffue, That the King fhould chufe one perfon, and the barons another; which two fhould chufe a third, who having heard the complaints on both fides, fhould eftablifh a lafting peace and agreement betwixt them. But this treaty was allowed to be put off till the return of prince ED-WARD, who was then beyond fea.

THE prince hearing this, made hafte home, that the peace might not be delayed by his abfence; who, when he came, and found what vain counfels the King had taken, was very angry, and abfented himfelf from his father's prefence, adhering to the barons in this behalf, as he had fworn: and they entered into a confederacy with one another, "That they would feize " the King's evil counfellors, and their abettors, " and to the utmost of their power remove them " from the King." Which, when the King understood, he betook himfelf, with his counfellors, into the Tower, his fon and the great men abiding ftill without.

THE next Christmas we find him still in the Tower, with the Queen and his counsellors, that were neither profitable to him, nor faithful. N 2 Which

91

Which counfellors fearing to be affaulted, got a guard, and kept clofe in the Tower. At length. by the Queen's means, with much ado, fome of the great men were reconciled, and made friends with them. When this was done, the King ventured himfelf out of the Tower, leaving the com-, mand of it to JOHN MANSEL (his principal counfellor, and the richeft clergy-man in the world) and went down to Dover, where he entered the caftle, which was neither offered him nor denied him. And there the King found how he had been impofed upon, when he faw a caffle fo carefully guarded by a guard of the barons, lie open to him. When he went away, he committed the charge of that caffle to E. DE WALERAN. He went likewife to Rochester castle, and feveral others, and found ingress and egress at his pleafure. It is plain they only kept them for the King.

At that time the King thinking himfelf fecure, refolved openly to depart from his oath, of which the pope had given him a releafe. He went, therefore, round about to feveral cities and caftles, refolving to take them and the whole kingdom into his hands, being encouraged and animated thereto, becaufe the King of France, together

Digitized by Google

ther with his great men, had lately promifed to affift him with a great force. Coming, therefore, to Winchefter, he turned his jufticiary and chancellor, that were lately inftituted by the parliament, out of their offices, and created *bene placite* new ones. Which, when the barons heard, they haftened with a great power towards Winchefter: of which, JOHN MANSEL having timely notice, went privately down to the King, and fufficiently informed him of his danger, and fetched him haftily back again to the Tower of London.

THERE the King kept his next Chriftmas * with the Queen and his counfellors: at which time it was greatly laboured, both by the bifhops of England and the prelates of France, to make peace betwixt the King and barons; and it came to this iffue: That the King and the peers fhould fubmit themfelves to the determination of the King of France, both as to the provisions of Oxford, and the fpoils and damages which had been done on both fides.

ACCORDINGLY the King of France calls a parliament at Amiens, and there folemnly gives fen-

* A. D. 1263. R. 47.

. tence

92

94 HISTORY OF

tence for the King of England againft the barons; "Whereby the ftatutes of Oxford, provifions, ordinances, and obligations, were wholly annulled, with this exception: that by that fentence he did in no wife intend to derogate at all from the antient charter of JOHN, King of England, which he granted to his parliament, or whole realm*." Which very exception compelled the earl of Leicefter, and all that had their fenfes exercifed, to continue in their refolution of holding firmly the ftatutes of Oxford; for they were founded upon that charter.

PRESENTLY after this, they all came home that had been prefent at the French parliament; the King of England, the Queen, BONIFACE, archbifhop of Canterbury, PETER of Hereford, and JOHN MANSEL, who ceafed not plotting and devifing all the mifchief they could againft the barons. From that time things grew worfe and worfe; for many great men left the earl of Leieefter and his righteous caufe, and went off perjured. HENRY, fon to the King of the Romans, having received the honour of Tickhel, which was given him by the prince, came to the earl,

* Universitati concessa.

and

Digitized by Google

and faid. "My lord earl, I cannot any longer " be engaged against my father King of Ger-" many, my uncle King of England, and my other" " relations; and therefore with your good leave " and licence, I mean to depart, but I never " will bear arms against you." To whom the earl chearfully replied, " Lord HENRY, I am " not at all troubled about your arms, but for " the inconftancy which I fee in you: therefore " pray go with your arms, and if you pleafe, " come back with your arms; for I fear them " not." At that time Roger DE CLYFFORD. ROGER DE LEIBERN, JOHN DE VALLIBUS, HA-MON L' ESTRANGE, and many others, being blinded with gifts, went of from their fidellity. which they had fworn to the barons for the common good. *

Ir Matt Paris had been alive, he would have told us a piece of his mind concerning this falle ftep of the barons, in putting their coat to arbitration, and fubmitting the English laws to the determination of an incompetent foreigner. But we loft his noble pen A. D. 1259. that is, about four years ago, prefently after the establishment of the

* In Commune.

provisions

95

provisions at Oxford: fo what has fince followed. is taken out of the continuator of his hiftory. who out of modefty has forborn to fet his name as being unworthy, as he fays, "To unloofe " the latchet of that venerable man's fhoe." But we are told that it was WILLIAM RISHANGER. who succeeded Matt. Paris in the same employment, and profecuted the hiftory to the end of HENRY III. I know not by what misfortune we have loft his provisions of Oxford, which he favs are written in his Addimenta: for certain it was by no neglect or omiffion of his, becaufe he died with them upon his heart. For the last passage but one that he wrote, was the death of FULK BASSET bishop of London, (whom we faw above he taxed formerly upon the fame acount) " Who," fays he, " was a noble perfon, " and of great generofity; and if he had not " a little before flaggered in their common pro-" vision, he had been the anchor and shield of " the whole realm, and both their flay and de-" fence."" It feems his faltering in that main affair, was what Matthew could never forgive him alive nor dead. And indeed this could not but come unexpectedly from fuch a man, who had always been firm and honeft to that degree, as to tell the King, when he arbitrarily threatened

07

threatened him for fome incompliance of his to turn him out of his bifhoprick: "Sir," fays he, "when you take away my mitre, I fhall put on "a headpiece."

AND therefore, the annals of BURTON, are a valuable piece of antiquity, because they have fupplied the defect, and have given us both a Latin and French copy of those provisions. It would be too large, as well as befide my purpofe, to fet them down. In fhort, whereas by Magna Charta in King JOHN's time there were twenty five barons (whereof the lord mayor of London was one) appointed to be confervators of the contents of that charter, with all power to diffres the King, in case of grievances, upon notice given, were not redreffed within forty days: on the other hand, in this provision of Oxford, which feems to be the eafier, as much as prevention of grievances is better than the cure of them, there were twenty four of the greateft men in England ordained, twelve by the King himfelf, and twelve by the parliament, to be a ftanding council, without whofe advice nothing was to be done. These were to have parliaments three times a year, where the barons might come, but the commons were excufed to fave charges. No wife man will fay that this Ο was was the English conftitution; but these were neceffary alterations by way of remedy, till they should be able to bring the government into the right channel again; for the provisions of Oxford were only provisional, like the interim in Germany, before the reformation; and to continue no longer than as so many fcaffolds, till the ruins of the realm were repaired. Accordingly the utmost provision that I find was but for twelve years, as we have it in the oath of the governors of the King's caftles, in the words below *.

So that the barons of England were certainly in the right, when they faid, that the provisions of Oxford were founded upon the Magna Charta which the French King and the parliament al-

* Ceo est le serment ke les gardens des chastels firent. Ko il les chastels le Rei leaument o en bone soi garderunt al oes le Roi et ses keyres. E ke eus les rendrunt al Rei u a ses heyres et a nul autre, et par sun counseil et en nul autre manere; Ceo est a saver per prodes homes de la terre estus a sun counseil, u par la greinure partie. E c'este surme par escrit dure deske a duz ans. E de ilokes eu avant por cost establement et cost ferment ne sient constreint ke franchement ne les pussent rendre al Rei u a sei heirs. Ann. Burton, 413

lowed

90

allowed; for every greater contains in it the lefs, and the power of the twenty four counfellors at Oxford, as much as the power of coerfion and punifhing is above that of directing.

THE French King and parliament were fo far parties, that (as we faw before) they had promifed the King a powerful affiftance; which gave him encouragement fo openly to break his oath, and undo what he had done: which certainly the barons did not then know, or elfe they would have been very far from fubmitting to their determination; efpecially when they could get nothing by it. For if it had proceeded in favour of them, they only had been where they were before, a foreign confirmation adding no authority to the Englifh laws; and that determination that was made, only ferved to puzzle the caufe, and to bring a war upon them, which it muft be this unwife expedient was intended to prevent.

THE first aggreffor in this war was ROGER MOR-TIMER, who invaded and ravaged the lands of SIMON MONFORT; but he was foon even with him: the prince likewife took feveral caftles; and ROBERT FERRARS earl of Derby, who was of neither fide, took that opportunity to feize and O 2 plunder

Digitized by Google

100

HISTORY

plunder the city of Worcester, and do a deal of mischief, for which he was afterwards sent prifoner to the Tower. The army of the barons eafily retook what had been taken, and marched towards London, where JOHN MANSEL lieutenant of the tower, fearing he should be severely handled by the barons, for he was the most special counsellor the King and Queen had, ran away by ftealth. The King likewife, fearing left the barons' army should befiege him in the Tower, by the mediation of fome that were afraid as well as he, yielded to an agreement with the barons, though it afterwards proved to be but fhort-lived; and promifed to keep the provisions of Oxford: but the queen. inftigated by a feminine malice, oppofed it all fhe could. The form of this peace between the King, the earl and barons, was upon these conditions: " First, that HENRY, fon of the King of " the Romans, (who was then the King's prifon-" er) fhould be releafed. Secondly, that all the " King's caftles throughout all England fhould " be delivered up to the cuftody of the barons. " Thirdly, that the provisions of Oxford be in-" violably kept. Fourthly, That all foreigners " by a fet time should evacuate the kingdom, " excepting those whose stay here should be al-" lowed by common confent, as trufty to the " realm.



" realm. [Perhaps not a quarter of the number which we have in one naturalization act.] " That " for the time to come the natives of England, " who are faithful and profitable to the realm, " may have the ordering of all affairs under " the King."

THESE things being thus covenanted, in a little while after, pacts, promises, oaths notwithstanding, feveral knights on the King's part ftored Windfor Caftle with a great quantity of provisions and arms, and they and the prince begun a new war. This war lasted with great variety of strange successes on both fides for several years, till the earl of Leicester was overthrown and flain in the battle of Evefham. Upon which the hiftorian fays; " And thus ended his labours that « great man Earl Simon, who fpent, not only " his, but himfelf in behalf of the opreffed, in " afferting a just cause, and maintaining the " rights of the realm. He undertook this caufe, " in which he fought to the death, by the ad-" vice, and at the inftance of the bleffed ROBERT " GROSTHEAD bishop of Lincoln, who constantly " affirmed, that all that died for it were crown-" ed with martyrdom."

After

102 HISTORY OF

AFTER this deciding battle the prince followed his blow, by advising his father to call a parliament forthwith. before his victory cooled; which accordingly met at Winchester, September 8. whereas the fight was August 5, before. In this parliament they did what they would with the earl's broken and difperfed party : " The chief " of them were imprifoned to be punished at the "King's will; the city of London disfranchifed " for their rebellion; all that took part with " Earl SIMON difinherited, whole lands the King " prefently beftowed upon those that had fluck " faithfully by him, as a reward of their merit." OTTOBON the legate, also called a council at Northampton, and there excommunicated all the bifhops and clergy that had aided and favoured Earl SIMON against the King; namely, the bishops of Winchefter, London, Worcefter, and Chefter: of whom the bifhop of Worcester poorly died [viliter] in a few days after this fentence: but the other three went to Rome to make their peace with the pope. In fhort, he excommunicated all others whatfoever, that had been against the King.

THE difinherited barons thought never the worfe of their caufe for this overthrow, but ftill continued

Digitized by Google

continued in arms for three years after. And though they were forced to fly from place to place, and live as they could, yet they feemed to be the conquerors. For their answer to the legate's meffage to them in the ifle of Ely, fhews them to be men of great wildom, integrity, and conftancy: and their demands likewife are like themselves. For they require the legate " to re-" ftore the council of the whole realm, which he " had irreverently ejected out of the realm, the " bishops of Winchester, London, and Chiches-" ter, men of great counfel and prudence, for " want of whom the nation funk. They require " him to admonifh the King to remove aliens " from his council, by whom the land is held " in captivity. That their lands may be reftor-" ed them without redemption at feven years " purchase, which was lately allowed them at " Coventry. That the provisions of Oxford be " kept. That hoftages be delivered them into " the ifle of Ely, and they to hold that place " peaceably for five years, while they shall fee " how the King performs his promifes." And after this, they reckon up feveral grievances. as the collation of benefices upon strangers, which are for the livelihood and maintenance of

104 HISTORY OF

of natives only, &c. All which they admonifh the legate to fee amended.

"THUS they treat," fays DANIEL *, " not like men, whom their fortunes had laid upon the ground, but as if they had been ftill ftanding; fo much wrought either the opinion of their caufe, or the hope of their party. But this *fubbornnefs* fo exafperates the King, as the next year following he prepares a mighty army, befets the ifle fo that he fhuts them up; and prince EDWARD, with bridges made of boats, enters the fame, to whom fome of them yielded themfelves, and the reft were difperfed by fight."

He needed not to have been at fuch a loss for a reason of these men's resolute behaviour, much less to have *miscalled it*, if he had needed the fourth article of their answer to the legate, which he has translated to loss. To the fourth they fay, "That their first oath was for the profit of the "realm, and the whole church; and all the pre-"lates of the kingdom have passed the sentence of excommunication against all that contravene

* Dan. p. 183

" it;

Digitized by Google

" it: and being ftill of the fame mind, they are " ready prepared to die for the faid oath. Where-" fore they require the legate to recall his fen-" tence of excommunication, otherwife they " would appeal to the apoftolic fee, and even to a " general council, or if need were, to the fovereign " judge of all."

Now they that had this fenfe of their duty, and of the public good, though they were loft men in the eye of the world, could not chufe but ftand upon their terms; neither could they abate one jot of a righteous caufe, which was all they had left to fupport them. And that was enough; for he that is in the right, is always fuperior to him that is in the wrong.

THE parliament at Winchefter feems to have fat in hot blood, but that King's fucceeding parliaments were far from fuffering him to be abfolute and arbitrary, "though there was never a rebel "amongft them." For the parliament at Bury gave nothing but very fmart denials to his and the legate's fcurvy petitions, *petitiones peffimas*, as they called them, which were contained in eight articles. The firft was, "That the prelates and rectors of "churches fhould grant him the tenths for three P "years 106

HISTORY OF

" years to come, and for the year last past, fo " much as they gave the barons for guarding the " fea against strangers." To this they gave answer, "That the war began by unjust covetife, " and is not yet over [the ifle of Ely being not " then reduced] and it were necessary to let alone " fuch very bad petitions as thefe, and to treat " of the peace of the realm, and to convert his " parliament to the profit of church and king-" dom, not to the extortion of pence, especially " when the land is fo far deftroyed by the war, " that it will be a long time, if ever, before it " recover." The feventh is in the pope's behalf, for the fpeedy preaching up of a crufado throughout all England. To this they made answer. " That the people of the land are in a great part. " deftroyed by the war; and if they fhould now " engage in a crufado, few or none would be " left for the defence of their country: whereby " it is manifest, that the legate would have the " natural progeny of the land into banishment. " that ftrangers might the more eafily conquer " the land." Art. VIII. Alfo it was faid, " That " the prelates were bound to agree to all thefe " petitions nolens volens, becaufe of their late oath " at Coventry, where they fwore they would aid " our lord the King, all manner of ways they

" could

107

" could poffibly." To this they made anfwer. "That when they took that oath, they " did not understand by it any other aid but " ghoftly and wholefome advice." A very trim answer. And all the reft are much after the fame fashion. And to conclude this whole reign, at his last parliament at Marleburgh, Magna Charta was confirmed in all its points.

Thus have I brought down the history of Magna Charta to the end of HENRY III. wherein you have a fhort, but punctual account of that affair, and the true face of things. For I have told the flory with the fame air the writer himfelf does, and have been fo faithful in the relation. as to keep clofe to his very phrafe; whereby, in feveral places, it is the worfe English though the better hiftory. As for the writer himfelf, he was the most able and sufficient, and the most competent that could be, writing upon the fpot, and having all the advantages which, added to his own diligence, could give him true information. For he was hiftoriographer royal to K. HENRY III. and invited by him to the familiarity of dining, and being in frequent conference with him; was directed by him to record feveral matters, and to fet them down in indelible characters, P 2 which,

108 H

V

HISTORY

OF

which, I believe, his will prove. And as to his integrity, no man can fuspect him, unlefs it be for being partial on the court fide, as being in their pay: but his writings flew that he was above that mean confideration; and though he gives the King a caft of his office where he can, and relates things to his advantage, yet he has likewife done right to the barons, and was a faster friend to truth than to either of them. And accordingly in King EDWARD the first's claim to a superiority over the kingdom of Scotland, this very writing is brought as authentic history concerning what paffed at York, 35 HENRY III. and is cited by the name of The Chronicle of St. Alban's. In one thing he excels, which is owing to the largeness and freedom of his converse with persons of the first quality, that he not only records barely what was done, but what every body faid upon all occafions, which (as BARONIUS fays it is) makes it a golden book. For men's speeches give us great light into the meaning of their actions, which is the very infide of hiftory.

In this hiftory of Magna Charta, the hiftory of the barons' wars was neceffarily involved, fo that in writing one I muft write both: for, as you fee, they were wholly undertaken for recovering and maintaining

maintaining the rights of the kingdom contained in that charter, and were in affirmance of it, Whereby they that have been told the barons' wars were a rebellion, may know better; and every honeft man will find their caufe to be fo just, that if he had lived in those days he must have joined in it; for fo we did lately in the fellow to it, at the last revolution. It is well indeed for us. that our ancestors lived before us. and with the expence of their blood recovered the English rights for us, and faved them out of the fire; otherwife we had been fealed up in bondage. and should have had neither any English rights to defend, nor their noble example to justify fuch a defence, but should have been in as profound an ignorance that ever there were any fuch rights, as the barons themselves were of HENRY the first's charter. For in all the fteps the barons took we followed them. Did they take arms for the fecurity of their liberties? fo did we. Did they withdraw their allegiance from an arbitrary and perjured King? fo did we. Did they fet another over his head, and proceed to the creation of a new King? fo did we. And if we had mifcarried in our affair, we had not been called rebels, but treated as fuch; and the bishop of London and all our worthies had made but a blue bufines of it.

it, without putting on the prince of ORANGE's livery. And therefore it is great ingratitude in those that receive any benefit or protection by this *bappy revolution*, to blemish the cause of the barons, for it is the same they live by; and as for those that had a hand in it, to call the barons' cause *a rebellion*, is utterly unaccountable, and like men that are not of their own fide.

LEAVING therefore, the proper work of reproaching and reviling both thefe as damnable rebellions, to the people of the court, and the harder work of proving them fo, I shall undertake the delightful tafk of doing fervice to this prefent rightful government, and at the fame time of doing right to the memory of our antient deliverers, to whom we owe all that diffinguishes the kingdom of England from that of Cevion. It had been wholly needlefs to have written one word upon this fubject, if this affair had ever been fet in a true light, as it lies in antiquity; or if our modern historians had not given a false turn to fo much of the matter of fact as they have related, and ruined the text by the comment. Mr. DANIEL has done this very remarkably; for after he has given us enough of this hiftory to juftify the barons' proceedings, and they had gaineð

MAGNA CHARTA. III

ed the establishment of Magna Charta, he begins his remarks upon it in these words *: " And in " this manner (though it were to be wifhed it had " not been in this manner) were recovered the " rights of the kingdom." Now, though if it had not been done in this manner, it had not been done at all; and though he allows it to be the recovery of their own, the rights of the kingdom. which one would think a very just and necessary work; yet this fhrug of a wifh leaves an impreffion upon his reader, as if the ways wherein they recovered them were unwarrantable. On the other fide, King JOHN would not allow them to be the rights of the kingdom at any rate+, "But " vain, fuperstitious, unreasonable demands: the " barons might as well ask him his kingdom : " and he fwore he would never grant them fuch " liberties, as fhould make himfelf to be a flave." So that I have two things to fhew: First, That they were verily and indeed the kingdom's rights: and fecondly, That they were very fairly recovered: and that the barons were in the right, both as to matter and fubstance, and no way reprovable for manner and form.

* Dan. p. 144.

† Matt. Paris p. 254.

Тне

112 HISTORY OF

THE charter of HENRY L was what the barons went by, and fo must we: where, towards the latter end, we find these words *: " I reftore you st the law of King EDWARD, with those amend-" ments my father made to it by the advice of " his parliament." Here was no new grant, he barely made restitution, and gave them back their own. And fo we find it in his father's time +. " He grants them the felf-fame laws and cuf-" toms which his coufin EDWARD held before " him." Or, as ORDERICUS VITALIS, a Norman has it [†], " He granted to the English that " they might perfevere in the laws of their fathers." So that in effect he granted Englishmen to be Englishmen, to enjoy the laws they were born to, and in which they were bred; their fathers' laws, and their mother tongue. A country-man would call this a pig of their own fow. And yet this

* Lagam regis Edwardi vobis reddo, cum illis emendationibus, quibus pater meus eam emendavit confilio baronum fuorum.

† Ces fount les leis & les cuflumes que le reis Wil. grentat a tut le puple de Engleterre apres le conquest de la terre. Ice les messines que le reis Edward sun cosin tint devant lui. Ingulphus, p. 88.

‡ P. 507. Anglis concessit sub legibus perseverare patriis.

grant

grant by way of charter, and under feal, whereby he gave them their own, and quitted all claim to it himfelf, was looked upon as the utmost confirmation and corroboration, and the last degree of fettlement amongst the Normans. And therefore, though King WILLIAM was too ftrong for his own charter, and fhamefully broke it, yet they covenanted with his fon HENRY I. before they chose him King, that as soon as he was crowned he should give them another, which accordingly he did. In the fame manner they dealt with King STEPHEN. And this made them covenant after the fame manner with King JOHN before they admitted him to the crown; and fo much infifted afterwards upon having his charter, and having their liberties fecured and fortified with his feal, figillo suo munitas, as they termed it. For in those days, what was not under feal, was not thought good in law: and not long before in HENRY the fecond's time, the bifhop of Lincoln. in a trial before the King, was for fetting afide all the Saxon kings' charters granted to the Abby of St. Alban's, for want of a feat; till the King feeing a charter of HENRY I. which confirmed them all*, "Why here," fays he, "is my grand-

* In vitis abb. p. 79.

" father's

112

Digitized by Google

" father's feal; this feal is the feal of all the ori-" ginal charters, as much as if it were affixed to " every one of them."—" Which wife decifion of " a young King was thought like Solomon's judg-" ment in finding out the true mother. For the " St. Alban's men had no way of anfwering " their adverfaries objection, That all privileges " that wanted feals are void, becaufe they could " not abfolutely fay there were no feals in " the Saxon times, there being a charter of ED-" WARD the confeffor, granted to Weftminfter " abby with a feal to it." But they might eafily have bethought themfelves that he was more than half a Norman,

Now these being the undoubted rights of the kingdom, their antient laws, and liberties, and birthright, we have the less reason to be follicitous in what manner they shall at any time recover them: let them look to that, who violently or fraudulently keep them from them. For it would be a ridiculous thing in our law, for a man to have an estate in land, and he could not come at it. The law will give him a way. If the law gives the King royal mines, it gives him a power to dig in any man's land where they are, that he may come at his own. And so if a nation have rights,

rights, all that is neceffary for the keeping and enjoying of them, is, by law, included in those rights themfelves, as purfuant to them.

But, becaufe this is a great point, and I would willingly leave it a clear one, I shall shew that the barons proceeded legally in their whole affair, and according to the known principles of the English government; and that all the pope's infallible bribe-arguments against them, which have been fince plentifully transcribed, are nothing worth.

I MIGHT, indeed, content myfelf with the fhort blunt argument of Mr. SELDEN, who was known to have the learning of twenty men, and honefty in proportion. Firft, That the cuftom and ufage of England is the law of England, as the ufage of parliament is the law of parliament. Now the anceftors of K. JOHN'S barons recovered their rights in the fame way. This was done in WILLIAM the firft's time, in the fourth year of his reign, when they * raifed a great army; and

* Matt. Paris in vit. Frederici abb. p. 48. Videntes igitur Angli rem agi pro capitibus, plures convocando exercitum numerofum ac fortisfimum conflaverunt.

Q 2

it

it was time, feeing that all they had lay at flake under a cruel and infolent prince. Whereupon* K. WILLIAM being in a bodily fear of bafely lofing the whole kingdom, which he had gained with the effusion of fo much blood, and of being cut off himfelf, called a parliament to Barkhamsted, where he fwore over again "To observe " inviolably the good, antient, approved laws of " the realm, and efpecially the laws of K. ED-" WARD." How inviolably he afterwards kept that oath, and how " he + enriched his Normans " with the fpoils of his own natural men, the " English, who, of their own accord, prefered " him to the crown," I had rather the reader himself should find out, by his own perusal of that instructive piece of history. Secondly, The English government is upon covenant and con-Now it is needless in leagues and covenants tract. to fay, what shall be done in cafe the articles are broken. If fatisfaction be denied, the injured

* Capit igitur rex wehementer fibi timere, ne totum regnum, quod tanti sanguinis effusione adquisierat, turpiter amitteret, etiam trucidatus.

+ Leges violans memoratas, suos Normannos, in suorum hominum Anglorum naturalium qui ipsum sponte sublimaverunt provocationem, locupletavit.

party

party must get it as he can. Taking of castles, ships, and towns, are not provided for and made lawful by any special article; but those things are always implied, and always done.

YET feeing pope INNOCENT III. in his bull for difannulling Magna Charta for ever, and in his excommunication of the barons, has afforded us his reasons for so doing, we can do no less than confider them. The weight of his charge against them is this: "That inftead of endeavouring to " gain what they wanted by fair means, they " broke their oath of fidelity: that they who were " vaffals prefumed to raife arms against their " lord, and knights against their King, which " they ought not to have done, put cafe he had " unjustly oppressed them; and that they made " themfelves both judges and executors in their " own caufe: that they reduced him to those " ftraits, that whatfcever they durft afk, he durft " not deny; whereby he was compelled by force, " and that fear which is incident to the flouteft "man, to make a diffionourable and dirty agree-" ment with them, which was likewife unlawful " and unjust, to the great derogation and dimi-" nution of his own right and honour. Now " because," fays the pope, " it is spoken to me " by

w by the lord in the prophet, I have fet thee up
over nations and kingdoms, to pluck up and
deftroy, to build and to plant, he proceeds to
damn as well the charter as the obligations
and cautions in behalf of it; forbidding the
King under the penalty of an anathema to
keep it, or the barons to require it to be kept."

THE barons might well fay that the pope went upon falle fuggestions; for he is out in every thing. For first, there was no winning of King IOHN by feeking to him : he would not have granted them their liberties, if they ha dkiffed his toe. The barons had really borne longer with him than they ought: for having flipulated to have their rights reftored to them before they admitted him to the crown, it was too long to ftay above fifteen years for them, and to fuffer fo much mifchief to be done in the mean time through their. neglect. In the third year of his reign, they met indeed at Leicester, and used a fort of negative means to come at their rights; for they fent him word, " That unlefs he would reftore " them their rights, they would not attend him " into France." But upon this, as HOVEDEN fays, the King using ill counfel, sequired their caftles; and beginning with WILLIAM ALBINET, demanded

demanded his caftle of Beauvoir. WILLIAM delivers his fon in pledge, but kept his caftle. And fo upon feveral occafions, they were forced to deliver up for hoftages their fons, nephews, and neareft of kin. And thus he tyrannized over them, till the archbifhop put them into a right method: and when at laft they had agreed to demand their rights, and had demanded them, they ftaid for an anfwer from Chriftmas to Eafter; for fo long he demurred upon what he was bound to have done above fifteen years before, and them gave them a flat denial. So that all the world, faving his holinefs, muft fay, that the barons were not rafh upon him.

Now fecondly, that the barons had no regard to their oath of fidelity*. For their oath of fidelity was upon this condition, that Earl JOHN fhould reftore all men their rights; and upon the faith which his commiffioners folemnly made to them that thus it fhould be, they fwore fidelity to him at Northampton. So that King JOHN had no right at all to this early oath of fidelity, becaufe he himfelf would not keep covenant, nor fulfil the terms and conditions upon which it was

* Juramento fidelitatis omnino contempto.

made.

110

made. The * bargain was, Earl JOHN should restore all men their rights; upon this they were fworn: but Earl JOHN did not nor would not reftore all men their rights; and therefore it was Earl JOHN himfelf that released them from their oath, and gave it them again. For I never heard of a covenant on one fide. The morrow after his coronation, he received their homages and fealties over again, but that was the counterpart of his coronation-oath. And that again he bitterly broke; though when he was adjured not to prefume to receive the crown, unlefs he meant to fulfill his oath, he then promifed, " That by the " help of God, he would keep all that he had " fworn bona fide." How he kept that part which concerned the church, no way concerns this difcourfe, becaufe he was at this time the pope's white boy, having before given him his kingdoms of England and Ireland, and had then fent him money to confound the barons and char-But the other two thirds of that oath which ter. concerned the people, I will here fet down, that

* Et fecerunt illis fidem, quod comes Johannes jura fua redderet univerfis; fub tali igitur conventione comites & barones comiti memorato fidelitatem contra omnes homines juraverunt.

every

every body who has read his reign, may fee how truly and faithfully he kept it *. " That he would " deftroy the bad laws, and establish good ones " in their room, and administer right justice " in the realm of England." His not keeping the oath to deftroy perverse laws, and substitute good, was the prefent controverly and quarrel which his barons had with him. For the whole meaning of the charter was to abolifh all the ill depraved laws and cuftoms that had been introduced, and to reftore the good, antient and approved laws of the kingdom instead of them. But the pope, amongst other proposals he made, would fain have prevented and baffled the charter by this expedient; " That King JOHN should " be bound to revoke all abufes introduced in his " time." This was a lame bufinefs indeed, when the opprefied barons wanted to be relieved from the tyrannous usages introduced in former reigns, and from a fucceffion of evils. King JOHN by his coronation-oath was bound to deftroy and abolifh all the bad laws that were before him, and fo are our Kings to this day, and not to make a former tyrannous reign a pattern. The barons might in-

* Et quod perversis legibus destructis, bonas substitueret; & rectam justitiam in regno Anglia exerceret.

R

deed

121

122 HISTORY OF

deed have had all King JOHN's later griévances redreffed, and yet have perifhed under the weight of fuch as were in his brother RICHARD's reign. After DANIEL has reckoned up feveral intolerable exactions and grievances in that reign, he has these words. " And with these vexations (faith Hove-" DEN) all England, from fea to fea, was re-" duced to extreme poverty; and yet it ended not " here: another torment is added to the confusion " of the fubjects by the juffices of the foreits, who " not only execute those hideous laws introduced " by the Norman, but impose others of more " tyrannical feverity, as the memory thereof " being odious, deferve to be utterly forgotten; " having afterwards by the hard labour of our no-" ble anceftors, and the goodness of more re-" gular princes, been affwaged, and now out of " ufe." This deceitful remedy of the pope's therefore would have undone the barons, for fuch a partial information of abuses would have established all the rest; according to that known maxim, Exceptio firmat regulam iu cafibus non exceptis.

To return to King John's oath; neither did he keep that branch of it which relates to the administration of true and upright justice: unless you will

will allow the deftroying of a brave baron, WIL-LIAM BRAUSE, and the familhing of his wife and two fons in Windfor Caftle. for a rafh word of her's : and the putting the archdeacon of Norwich into a fheet of lead, and feveral fuch barbarities, to be choice and eminent inftances of it. So that when the pope charges the barons with the breach of their oath of fidelity to King JOHN, it is unknown to me that they owed him any : which King JOHN himfelf feemed to miftruft. when after the barons' demand of their liberties. he used that fruitless precaution of causing his whole kingdom to fwear fidelity to him, and renew their homages. For what fignified this fwearing to him never fo often, while he himfelf was breaking the original contract, and rendering all their fidelities meer nullities, by deftroying the foundation of them, and the only confideration upon which they were made? It is, as LAUD favs. " A covenant is a knot, you need not loofe " both ends of it, but untying one end you un-" ty both." And fuch is the mutual bond of ligeance betwixt King and people, it is conditional and reciprocal: and therefore it was impoffible for King JOHN's fubjects to be bound while he was loofe. That the fidelity of King's and fubjefts to each other is mutual, conditional, reci-R 2 procal,

144 HISTORY OF

procal, and dependent, I fhall prove by the authority of two Kings, who very well knew how that matter flood. It is a folemn covenant of their's, which becaufe it is fhort, I will here tranfcribe*. "They both of them enter a fa-"ving for the fidelity they owe to their fub-"jects, fo long as their fubjects fhall keep their "fidelity to them." Here we have that expressed which was ever implied: for whether the Quamdiu, eousque, quousque, usqueque, be in or out, it matters not. At K. STEPHEN's first parliament at Oxford, he made them a charter, which he

* Ego Lodowicus Rex Francorum, & ego Rex Anglorum volumus ad omnium notitiam pervenire, nos Deo infpirante, promififfe, & juramento confirmaffe, quod fimul ibimus in fervitium crucifixi, & ituri Hierofolymam, fuscipicmus fignaculum sanctae crucis: & amodo volumus effe amici ad invicem, ita quod uterque nostrum alteri conscrvabit vitam, & membra & honorem terrenum, contra omnes homines. Et fi quacunque persona alteri nostrum malum facere presumpserit, ego Henricus juvabo Lodowicum Regem Francorum dominum meum contra omnes homines, & ego Lodowicus juvabo Regem Anglorum Henricum contra omnes homines, ficut fidelem meum, falva fide, quam debennus hominibus nostris, quamdiu nobis fidelitatem fervabunt. Acta autem sunt hec apud Minantcourt septimo octobris. A. D. 1177. M. P. p. 133. Forma pacti inter Anglorum & Gallorum reges initi.

promifed

promifed before his coronation, whereby he freed both clergy and laity from all their grievances wherewith they had been oppreffed, and confirmed it by his oath in full parliament: where likewife, fays DANIEL, the bifhops fwore fealty unto him, but with this condition, " So " long as he observed the tenor of this charter." Now it feems this claufe of abundant cauteloufnefs was not in the oath of the earls and barons. neither needed it: for if K. STEPHEN broke with his people, of course their fealty ceased. This we have again expressed in words at length, in the folemn charter of the fame King, wherein by confent of parliament he adopted and made HENRY II. his heir, and gave him and his heirs the realm of England*.

THEIR duty to him ceased till he mended his fault, and returned again to keep his covenant; Quousque errata corrigat, & ad prædistam passionem observandam redeat. Paulo infra. There is no

* Comites ctiam & barones mei ligium homagium duci fecerunt falva mea fidelitate, quamdiu vixero & regnum tenuero: fimili lege quod fi ego a predictis recederem, omnino a fervitio meo ceffarent quoufque errata corrigerem. Brompton, Col. 1038.

need

need of these words at length at the end of every charter or petition of right, in cafe it be broken. which we find in the close of HENRY the third's charter. Anno Regni 42. Liceat omnibus de Regno nostro contra nos insurgere, & ad gravamen nostrum opem & operam dare, ach nobis in nullo tenerentur*. " All the men in our realm may rife up " against us, and annoy us with might and main, " as if they were under no obligation to us:" becaufe in the Polifh coronation-oath, which is likewife in words at length, we have a plain hint why they had better be omitted and fuppreffed +. " And in cafe I break my oath, (which Gop for-" bid) the inhabitants of this realm fhall not be " bound to yield me any obedience." Now this God forbid, and the harsh supposition of breaking an oath at the very making of it, is better omitted, when it is for every body's eafe rather to fuppofe that it will be faithfully kept; efpecially feeing that in cafe it be unhappily broken, the very natural force and virtue of a contract does of itfelf fupply that omiffion. Neither is it practifed in articles of agreement and covenants

* In Archiv. London.

† Quod fi facramentum mean violavero (quod absit) incolae hujus Regni nullam nobis obcdientiam praestare tenebuntur. under

under hand and feal between man and man, to make a fpecial provision, that upon breach of covenants they shall sue one another either at common-law, or in chancery: because this implies that one of them should prove an knave and dishoness; but when that come to pass, I am sure Westminster-Hall cannot hold them,

In like manner the barons, after they had borne with K. JOHN's breach of covenant very much too long, fwore, at last, at the high altar at St. Edmondíbury, " That if he refused them " their liberties, they would make war upon him " fo long as to withdraw themfelves from their " fidelity to him, till fuch time as he confirm-"ed their laws and liberties by his charter *." And afterwards, at the demand of them, they fay, that which is a very good reafon for their refolve. " That he had promifed them those antient laws " and liberties, and was already bound to the ob-" fervation of them by his own proper oath." So that the pope was quite out, when he fays the barons fet at nought, and broke their oath of fidelity to K. JOHN, for they only helped him to keep his.

* Matt. Paris, p. 253.

THE

1 28

HISTORY OF

THE next thing objected against the barons is this: "That they who were vaffals prefumed to " raife arms against their lord, and knights " against their King; which they ought not to " have done, although he had unjuftly oppreffed " them. And that they made themfelves both " judges and executors in their own caufe." All which is very eafily answered. First, It was always lawful for vaffals to make war upon their lords, if they had just cause. So our Kings did perpetually upon the Kings of France, to whom they were vaffals all the while they held their territories in that kingdom. And by the law of England, an inferior vafial might fight his lord in a weighty caufe, even in duel. The pope feems here willing to deprefs the barons with low titles, that he may the better fet off the prefumption of their proceedings; but before I have ended, I fhall fhew what vaffals the barons were. Ifould be loth to fay, that the Kings of England were not all along as good men as their lords of France, or that the barons of England were not good enough to affert their rights against any body; but this I do fay, that it was always lawful for vaffals to right themfelves even while they were vaffals, and without throwing up their homage and fealty: for that was never done till they declared

clared themselves irreconcilable enemies, and were upon terms of defiance. Thus the Kings of England always made war in defence of their rights, without throwing up their homage and fealty, till that last bitter enraged war of HENRY II. wherein he had that ill fuccefs as broke his heart, and forced him to a difhonourable peace. the conclusion of which he out-lived but three days. Amongst other things, he did homage to the King of France, because, in the beginning of this war, he had rendered up his homage to him. Matt. Paris takes notice of it as an extraordinary thing, and I do not remember it done before. Quia in principio bujus guerræ bomagium reddiderat regi Francia, p. 151. The fame was practifed by HENRY III. towards that great man RICHARD, the marshal: he fent him a defiance by the bifhop of St. David's into Wales. Upon which, the marshal tells friar AGNELLUS, the King's counfellor in that long conference before mentioned, Unde bomo suus non fui, sed ab ipsius bomagio per ipfum absolutus. This was reciprocal from the lord to the vaffal, or from the vaffal to the lord, as he found caufe. And therefore, K. JOHN's vaffals, who are here represented as if they were food for tyranny, and bound by their places to be unjustly oppressed, for fo the pope S allows

allows the cafe; I fay, these vaffals, if they had been fo minded, instead of being contented with a charter at Running-Mead, might foon have been quite off of K. JOHN, by refigning their homage to him. This K. EDWARD the fecond's vaffals did in manner and form by the mouth of WILLIAM TRUSSEL, a judge, in these words *: " I WILLIAM TRUSSEL, in the name of all men " of the land of England, and of the whole par-" liament procurator, refign to thee, EDWARD, " the homage formerly made to thee; and hence-" forward I defy thee, and prive thee of all royal " power and dignity, and shall never hereafter " be tendant on thee as King." This was the ftanding law long before the time of K. JOHN's barons; for the parliament in the 10th of RI-CHARD II. fent the King a folemn meffage, that + by an antient statute, they had power to depose

* Ego Willielmus Truffel, vice omnium de terra Anglia, & totius parliamenti procurator, tibi Edwarde reddo homagium prius tibi factum; & extunc difido te, & privo omni potestate regia & dignitate, nequaquam tibi de cætero tanquam regi pariturus. Knyghton, col. 2549.

+ Knyghton, col. 2683. Habent enim ex antiquo flatuto, & de facto non longe retroactis temporibus experienter quod dolendum cft habito, fi rex ex maligno confilio quocunque vel inepta a King

a King that would not behave himfelf as he ought. nor be ruled by the laws of the realm: and they inftance in this depofing of EDWARD II. but withal, as a late and modern thing, in respect of the antiquity of that statute. Such an irrefragable testimony and declaration of a parliament fo long fince, concerning what was ordained in the eldeft ages long before, plainly fhews the English conflitution, and is a full confutation of the late K. JAMES'S memorial at Ryfwick. And this power feems to be well known to K. JOHN's barons, who, when there is occafion, talk familiarly of creating a new King, and afterwards were forced to do it. though now they only fought their charter, and did not attempt to take from bim bis kingdom, which the pope indeed fays, but it was not true.

So far have I cleared them from prefumption as vaffals: now as knights. It is true, their tenure was to affift the King againft the enemies of the realm; but how, if he turned fo himfelf? Unjust opprefion, which is the pope's own fuppofi-

contumacia aut contemptu, seu proterva voluntate singelari se alienaverit a populo suo, nec voluerit per jura regni, & statuta, & laudabiles ordinationes gubernari & regulari, extunc licitum est eis ipsum Regem de regali solio abrogare, &c.

Ş 2

RIZ HISTORY OF

tion, is no friendly part. Muft they then aid hims against the realm, and be the instruments of his unjust oppression upon themselves? Their duty and service was to the realm in chief, to him it was subaltern: and therefore, knowing their duty better than the pope did, they all left K. JOHN but seven, before he would consent to the parliament at Running-Mead. For it is plain the pope would have had them passive-obedient knights, and a contradiction to their very order, whereby for certain they had forfeited their spurs.

"YEA, but the barons were judges and executors in their own caufe." And who can help it, if they were made to in the first institution, and from the very foundation of this government? As foon as the Saxons had chosen from among themfelves one King, this the Mirror fays expressly, was the jurifdiction of the King's companions. For though the King had no peer, yet if he wronged any of his people, it was not fit that he that was party should be likewife judge, nor for the fame reason, any of his commissioners: and therefore

therefore these companions were, by their place, to right the subjects in parliament *.

THE fame is more largely fet down by the lord chief juffice BRACTON; and therefore I will tranfcribe it in his own words +.

* Mirror, p. 9. Et tout soit que le Roye ne devoit aver nul peere en la terre, pur ceo nequidant que le Roy de son tort, Sil pecha vers ascun d'son people, ne nul de ses commissaires, poit e. judge & partee, convient per droit que le Roy us compaignions pur oyer & terminer aux parliaments tressouts les breves & plaints de torts de le Roy, de la Roigne, & de lour infans, & de eux especialment de que torts len ne poit aver autrement commun droit.

+ Res autem habet superiorem, Deum f. Item legem, per quam factus est rez: Item curiam suam, widelicet comites, barones, quia comites dicuntur quasi socii regis; & qui habet socium habet magistrum: & ideo si Rex suerit sine fræno, i. sine lege, debent ei frænum ponere, nist ipsimet suerint cum rege sine fræno; & tunc clamabunt subditi, & dicent, Domine Jesu Christe, in chamo & fraeno maxillas eorum constringe; ad quos Dominus, wocabo super eos gentem robustam & longinquam & ignotam, cujus linguam ignorabunt, quae destruct eos, & ewellet radices eorum de terra, & a talibus judicabuntur, quia subditos noluerunt juste júdicare; & in sine, ligatis manibus & pedibus eorum, mittet eos in caminum ignis & tenebras exteriores, ubi crit stetus firidor dentium. Lib. II. cap. 16. f. 34.

He

134 HISTORY OF

HE fays, the King has thefe above him. God; also the law, which makes him a King; alfo his parliament, namely, the earls and barons, who ought to bridle a lawlefs King, &c. In this large paffage you plainly fee that what the barons did was fo far from being the abfurd and prefumptuous ufurpation of making themfelves judges and executors in their own caufe, that it was their bounden duty. It was not only lawful for them to reftrain and bridle a lawlefs King. but it was incumbent upon them under the greatest penalties, and neither lawful nor fafe for them to let it alone. So that here the barons were hard befet; the pope delivers them up to Satan for what they did, and they had exposed themfelves to the vengeance of GoD, and going to hell, if they had not done it. But they chofe to do their duty to God and their diffreffed country, and to venture the caufeless curfe from Rome.

I MIGHT multiply quotations out of Fleta and others to the fame purpole, but what I have fet down is fufficient; and therefore I shall rather take this occasion to admire the wildom of the English constitution, which feems to be built for perpetuity.

perpetuity. For how can a government fail which has fuch lafting principles within it, and a feveral refpective remedy lodged in the very bowels of it? The King has a known power of caufing all his fubjects to keep the law; that is an effectual remedy againft lawlefnefs and anarchy: and the parliament has a power, if need be, to hold the King to the obfervation of the laws; and that is a prefervative againft tyranny.

This is the Palladium of our government. which cannot be stolen as their's was from Troy: for the keepers of it are too many to be killed. becaufe every Englishman has an interest in it: for which reafon neither can it be bought and fold, fo as to make a title; and a man of a moderate understanding may eafily undertake that it shall never be preached away from us. And hereby England is rendered the nobleft commonwealth and kingdom in the world. I name commonwealth first, because K. JAMES I. in one of his fpeeches to the parliament, fays, "I am the " great fervant of the commonwealth." From hence I infer, that this was a commonwealth before he was the great fervant of it. Great and little is not the difpute; for it is for the honour and interest of so glorious a state, to have a prince as

as great as they can make him. As, to compare great things with fmall, it is for the honour of the city to have a magnificent lord-mayor. And K. JAMES told us no news in naming his office; for this is the country, as FORTESCUE's whole book fhews us. "Where the King is appointed for " the realm, and not the realm for the King." And I can fhew a hundred places in antiquity, where the body of this nation is called republic; as for inftance, where Bracton fays, laws are made communi republicæ (ponfione : though I confefs, in relation to a King, it oftener goes by the prouder name of realm. But this conflictution of state and regal government, which is the constitution of England, cannot be fo well understood by any other one book, as by my lord chancellor Fortescue's, which was a book written for the nonce, and to instruct the prince into what fort of government he was like to fucceed. As directly opposite to this government, he has painted the French government, made up of men at arms and editts*. The prince in the conclusion of it, "Does not doubt but this discourse of the " chancellor's will be profitable to the Kings of " England, which hereafter shall be:" and I am

* Fortescue, p. 79.

fatisfied,

fatisfied, that no wife King, after he has read that little book, would change governments with the Grand Seignior.

• AND, as the prince has recommended the ufefulnefs of this difcourfe to all future Kings, fo I heartily recommend it to the careful perufal of all Englishmen, who having feen a fucceffion of bad reigns, think there is fomewhat in the mill, and that the English form of government is amifs; whereas the fault lies only in the mal-administration; or if there should happen to be any flaw or defect in any of the occasional laws, it may easily, and ought to be rectified every parliament that fits down, as the book fays.

I NEVER heard of any that diffiked the English government but some of the prince's progenitors Kings of England; who, thinking themselves shackled and manacled by the English laws, en-. deavoured to throw off this state-yoke, that they might rule or rather rage over their subjects * in regal wise only, not confidering that to govern the people by the laws of the state, is not a yoke, but liberty; and the greatest fecurity, not only to the

> * Moliti funt hec jugum politicum abjiccre. T fu

127

138 - HISTORY

OF

fubject, but to the King himfelf, and in great measure rids him of care. But the same author. p. 88. tells us the fuccess of this attempt * : these progenitors of the prince, who thus endeavoured, with might and main, to be rid of this fategovernment, not only could not compass that larger power which they grasped at, but risqued both themselves and their kingdom. As we ourfelves have likewife feen in the late K. JAMES. Or, on the other fide, perhaps it is difliked by fome who have feen no other effects of it, but what have proceeded from the Scotch King-Craft, which is worfe than no government at all, and have imputed those corruptions and disorders to the English frame of government; or at leaft. think that it has no remedy provided against them: and fo have fallen into the waking dreams of know not what, for want of under-T standing the true of the English government. But I can assure these persons, that upon farther fearch they will find it quite otherwife, and that the English frame of government cannot be mended; and the old land-marks better placed, than we could have laid them with our own hands: and withal, that all new projects come a thousand

* Qui fic politicum regimen abjicere satagérunt.

years

years too late. For England has been fo long formed to its own laws, and its laws to it, that we are all of a piece: and both in point of gratitude to our ancestors who have spent their lives to transmit them to us. and out of love to posterity to convey them a thing more valuable than their lives, we cannot think much at any time to venture our own. I am clearly of Sir Ro-BERT PHILIPS's mind in the parliament quarte Caroli: " Nothing fo endangers us with his ma-" iesty, as that opinion that we are antimonar-" chically affected; whereas, fuch is and ever " has been our loyalty, if we were to chuse a " government, we should chuse this monarchy " of England above all governments in the " world." Which we lately have actually done, when no body could claim it. for they could only claim under a forfeited title: and at a time when too much occafion had been given to the whole nation to be out of conceit with Kings,

As for the remaining part of the pope's traft, it is not worth anfwering. "That the barons "reduced K. JOHN to those ftraits, that what "they dared to ask, he dared not to deny." For they asked him nothing but their own, which he ought not to have denied them, nor have put T a them

139

140 HISTORY OF

them to the trouble of coming to hardly by it. Nor was the granting of Magna Charta *a foul and differentiable composition*, but just and honourable; and therefore honourable because it was just. As for the compulsion there was in it, a man that must be made to be honess, cannot complain of that himself, nor any body for him. In this whole affair, the pope's apostolical authority went farther than his arguments.

It is the lasting honour of Magna Charta and the barons, that they were run down by a pope and a general council, which were the first that eftablished transubstantiation *, and the deposing of Kings for herefy, either their own, or even that of their subjects, if they suffered them in their dominions: in which case the pope was to absolve their subjects from their allegiance, to set up a crusado against them, and to dispose of their kingdoms to catholic free-booters. This was a powerful transforming metamorphosing council; but they that could turn a bit of bread into a god, might more easily turn better chriftians than themselves into Saracens. I take the

Lateran. fub Innocent III.

decrees

declaration of war, yea a holy war, against all protestant princes and states to the end of the world; whereby all papists are the public and declared enemies of that part of mankind, whom they have been pleased to call heretics: for it is the established doctrine of their church.

HAVING disproved LAUD'S first charge against Magna Charta, That it had an obscure birth, as if it had been base-born, illegitimate, or upstart; I proceed to the second, That it was softered by an ill nurse. In answer to which, it would be sufficient to fay, that it was softered by a fuccession of kings, and above thirty parliaments; and if that be an ill nurse, let all the world find a better. But I shall be somewhat more particular, and shew what great care was taken of it in after-ages. In EDWARD the first's time, after it had been confirmed three times, ordered to be twice a year read in churches, was sealed with the bishops' and barons' seals as well as the King's own, and fworn to by the barons and others *, that they

* Knyghton, col. 2523. Et ad ejus obfervationem confilium fuum & auxilium fidele praestabunt in perpetuum.

would

142 HISTORY OF

would for ever afford their counfel and faithful aid towards their having it kept; I fay, after all this, which was good nurfing on the parliament's part, it had like to have been overlaid by the pope: for when the King thought his whole bufinefs in Scotland was fettled, he entered into an intrigue with pope CLEMENT V. very much to the prejudice of Magna Charta; but Mr. DANIEL shall have the honour of telling the ftory *. " This " pope was native of Bourdeaux, and fo the more " regardful of the King's defire, and the King " more confident of his favour: which, to enter-" tain and increase. he sends him a whole sufni-" ture of all veffels for his chamber of clean " gold: which great gift fo wrought with the " pope, as he let loofe his lion, untied the King " from the covenant made with his fubjects con-" cerning their charters confirmed to them by " his three laft acts of parliament, and abfolved " him from his oath: an act of little piety in the " pope, and of as little confcience in the King, " who (as if he fhould now have no more need " of his fubjects) difcovered with what fincerity " he granted what he did.

* Dan. p. 200. A. Reg. 33.

BUT

Digitized by Google

" BUT fuddenly hereupon, there fell out an " occasion that brought him back to his right " orb again, made him fee his error, and reform " it: finding the love of his people lawfully or-" dered, to be that which gave him all his pow-" er and means he had, and to know their fub-" ftances were intermutual. The news of a " new King made and crowned in Scotland, was " that which wrought the effect hereof. For " upon this he went to Scotland, and not long " after wintering at Carlifle, held his last parlia-" ment there: wherein, fays DANIEL, the state " was mindful of the pope's late action, and got " many ordinances to pass for reformation of the " abuses of his ministers, and his own former " exactions." In the next reign it was confirmed in the third year of EDWARD II. and afterwards greatly violated; but every body knows what came of that.

IN K. EDWARD the third's time it received many noble confirmations; and amongst the rest, in the forty second year of his reign, it is provided, that all statutes made against Magna Charta are void. In the fourth year of RICHARD II. it was appointed by the archbishop and lord chancellor

HISTORY OF

cellor to be read at the opening of the parliament, as if it were the foundation and ftandard of our laws; and in fhort, it was confirmed over and over again in the fucceeding reigns: fo that it was always common law, it is now become a great part of the ftatute law; the ftatute called *The great charter of the liberties of England*, and *The laudable ftatute of Magna Charta*. With this honour and renown it defcended all along down to us, till it fell into the very dregs of tyranny, and then they pick quarrels with it for its birth and breeding.

Now to strip it out of LAUD's difguifing cant of an obscure birth and ill nursing, the plain notion of Magna Charta is this: It is a fummary of the native and inherent rights of Englishmen, which the Norman Kings, by granting afterwards by charter, bound themselves not to break in upon and invade: fo that it was only a Norman-fashioned fecurity, that thefe rights fhould not be violated. But we do not hold these rights by charter; no, not by the old dear-bought parchment and wax; for they are the birthright of Englishmen, which no kings could ever give or take away: they are, as they are called 25 EDWARD III. The franchifes of the land, and every Englishman,

man, by being born in the land, is born to them. And thefe original rights being a better inheritance to every Englishman than his private patrimony, how great foever, and being transmitted down to posterity by the hard labour, fweat, and blood of our ancestors, they are the *cbildren's bread*: and it is not meet for us to take the children's bread and cast it away.



U

14

I thas been judged proper to annex to this hiftory, by way of appendix, for the fatisfaction of the curious,

I. The Capitula or articles on which the Magna Charta of K. John was framed, the original of which in Latin, with K. John's feal to it, was found in the fludy of Dr. Warner, bifhop of Rochefter, and afterwards came into the hands of Dr. Burnet, late bifhop of Salifbury. It appears that this is the infirument mentioned by Matt. Paris, p. 254. Archiepifcopus schedulam illam, &c. "The archbifhop with others brought that "fchedule to the King, and recited before him all the Capitula, "Sc." which though the King then rejected, he fbortly after agreed to, as may be gathered from the next page of that historian.

II. A copy in French, or old Norman, of the Magna Charta of K. John complete, which agrees with the Latin one printed in Matt. Paris; it being cuftomary in old times to make three copies of public acts and charters, viz. in Latin, French, and English. This which is printed here was kept in the records of France, and thence published by Luke Dachery in his Spieelegium.

Both the Capitula and the charter at large are likewife here translated for the benefit of common readers.

They who are curious to have a more particular account of these copies, may confult the appendix to a pamphlet published about the year 1689. (and fince reprinted in the first volume of State Tracts in K. William's reign) intitled, Reflections upon the Opinions of some modern Divines, &c.

CAPITULA

Super quibus facta est

MAGNA CHARTA

REGIS JOHANNIS,

Ex MS. Archiep. Cantuar. Fol. 14. Quæ etiam authenticè cum figillo extant in manibus Reverendiff. patris Gilb. Burnet, Epifc. Salifburienfis.

I STA sunt capitula que barones petunt, « dominus Rer concedit, signata Agilio Iohannis Regis.

Post decession antecessorum heredes plene etatis habebunt hereditatem suam per antiquum relevium exprimendum in charta.

Peredes

THE

ARTICLES

Upon which the

GREAT CHARTER

OF

KING JOHN

WAS FRAMED.

- Taken out of a Manuscript of the ABp. of *Cant*. Fol. 14. The Original whereof, with the Great Seal annexed, is extant in the hands of Dr. *Gilb. Burnet*, now Bishop of *Salisbury**.
- HESE are the particulars which the barons demand, figned with K. JOHN'S feal.

HEIRS of full age shall have their inheritance / after the decease of their ancestors, paying the antient relief to be expressed in the charter.

* Auno 1710.

Heirs

150 CAPITULA, &c.

Peredes qui intra etatem sunt & fuerunt in custodia, cum ad etatem pervenerint, babe= bunt hereditatem suam sine relevio & sine.

Euflos terre heredis capiet rationabiles exitus, confuetudines & fervitia fine deftruitione & vasta hominum & rerum suarum. Et si custos terre fecerit destruitionem & vastam amittat custodiam, & custos suffentabit domos, parcos, vivaria, stagna, molendina, & cetera ad terram illam pertinentia de eritibus terre ejusdem. Et ut heredes ita maritentur ne disparagentur, & per concilium propinquorum de consanguinitate sua.

Re bidua det aliquid pro dote sua, bel maritagio mariti sui, sed maneat in domo sua per FC. dies post mortem ipsus: e infra terminum illum assignetur ei dos, e maritagium statim habeat e hereditatem suam. Rer vel ballivus non saisiet terram aliquem pro debito dum catalla debitoris sufficient, nec plegis debitoris distringantur dum capitalis debitor sufficit ad solutionem. Si vero capitalis debitor defecerit in solutione, si plegis voluernt habere debitoris do nec

ARTICLES, &c. 151

HEIRS within age, and that have been in ward, fhall have their inheritance, when they come at age, without paying relief or making fine.

THE guardian of an heir's land fhall take the reafonable iffues, cuftoms, and fervices, without the deftruction or wafte of his men or goods. And if fuch guardian make deftruction and wafte, he fhall lofe the wardfhip, and the guardian fhall keep in repair the houfes, parks, ponds, pools, mills, and other appurtenances to the effate, out of the profits of the land: and fhall take care that the heirs be married without difparagement, and by the advice of their near kindred.

THAT a widow fhall give nothing for her dower or marriage after the death of her hufband, but fhall be fuffered to dwell in her hufband's houfe ninety days after his death; within which time her dower fhall be affigned her, and fhe fhall immediately have her marriage and her inheritance. The King nor his bailiff fhall not feize any land for debt, if the debtor's goods be fufficient; nor fhall the debtor's fureties be diffrained upon, when the debtor himfelf is able to pay the debt. But if the debtor fail of payment, the fureties,

152 CAPITULA. &c.

nec debitum illud perfoldatur plene, nisi capitalis debitor monstrare poterit se esse inde quietum erga plegios.

Rer non concedit alicui baroni quod capi= at auxilium de liberis hominibus luis, nifi ad caput luum redimendum, & ad faciendum primogenitum filium luum militem, ad primogenitam filiam luam maritandam, & hoc faciet per rationabile auxilium.

Ne aliquis majus lervitium faciat de feodo militis quam inde debetur : ut communia placita non lequantur curiam domini Regis fed alignentur in aliquo certo loco, ¢ ut recognitiones capiantur in ejuldem comitatibus in hunc modum. At Rex mittat duos justitiarios per quatuor vices in anno, qui cum quatuor militibus ejuldem commitatus electis per comitatem capiant asse de nova disfailina, morte antecessoris, ¢ ultima prefentatione: nec aliquis ad hocsit fummonitus nis juratores ¢ due partes.

ut liber homo amercietur pro parbo debi= to lecundum modum deliki, E pro magno debito lecundum magnitudinem deliki, falbo

ARTICLES, &c. 152

furcties, if they will, may have the debtor's lands till the debt be fully fatisfied, unless the principal debtor can thew that he is quit against his surcties.

THE King shall not allow any baron to take aid of his free tenants, but for the redemption of his person, for the making his eldest fon a knight, and towards the marriage of his eldest daughter once; and hereunto he shall have but a reasonable aid.

THAT none shall do more fervice for a knight's fee, than is due for the same. That common pleas shall not follow the King's court, but shall' be holden in some certain place: and that recognitions be taken in their proper counties, and after this manner, viz. That the King shall send two justices four times a year, who, together with' four knights of the same shire, chosen by the shire, shall take affizes of novel diffeisin, mordancester, and darrein presentment: nor shall any be summoned hereunto, but the jurors and the two parties.

THAT a freeman shall be amerced for a small fault after the manner of the fault, and for a great fault according to the greatness of the fault, X faving

bo contenemento suo. Afilanus etiam amercietur, salbo vainagio suo, & mercator eodem modo, salva merchandisa, per sacramentum proborum hominum de visneto, ut clericus amercietur de saíco seodo suo secundum modum aliorum predistorum & non secundum benesicium ecclesiasticum.

Re aliqua villa amercietur pro pontibus faciendis ad riparias, nisi ubi de jure antiquitus esse colebant.

De menlura vini, bladi, & latitudines pannorum, & rerum aliarum emendetur, & ita de ponderibus.

Ut allila de nova diffailina e de morte antecessoris abbrevientur, e similiter de aliis alliss.

Ut nullus vicecomes intromittat le de placitis ad coronam pertinentivus fine coronatorivus, & ut comitatus & hundreda fint ad antiquas firmas ablque ullo incremento, erceptis dominicis maneriis Regis.

Øi

faving his contenement. A villain alfo fhall be amerced faving his wainage, and in like manner a merchant faving his merchandize, by the oath of good men of the vicinage: that a clerk fhall be amerced according to his lay-fee in manner aforefaid, and not according to his ecclefiaftical benefice.

THAT no town be amerced for not making bridges nor banks, but where they have been of old time, and of right ought to be,

THAT the measure of wine, of corn, and the breadth of cloth, and the like, be rectified, and fo of weights.

THAT affizes of novel diffeifm and mordancefter be abbreviated, and so of other affizes.

THAT no fheriff shall intermeddle with pleas of the crown without the coroners; and that counties and hundreds shall be at the antient farms without any increase, except the King's own demesse manors.

. h

Si aliquis tenenş de Rege moriatur, licebit vicecomiti vel alio ballivo Regis saisire ç inbreviare catallum ipsius per visum legalium hominum, ita tamen quod nivil inde amoveatur donec plenius sciatur si debet aliquid liquidum devitum domini Regis, ç tunc debitum domini Regis persolvatur. Residuum vero relinquetur erecutoribus, ad faciendum testamentum defuniti. Et si nivil Regi debetur, omnia catalla cedent defunita.

Si aliquis liher homo intestatus decesserit, hona sua per manum proximorum parentum suorum & anucorum, & per visum ecclesse, distribuuntur.

Re vique diffringantur ad le maritandum dum volutrine sine marito vivere, ita tamen quod securitatem facient quod non maritabunt se sine ascensu Regis, si de Rege teneant, vel donunorum fuorum de quivus tenent.

De constabularius vel aliug ballivys capis at blada vel alia catalla, nisi statim inde reddat, nisi respectum habere possit de voluntate venditoris.

Ðe

Is any tenant of the King die, the fheriff, or other the King's bailiff, may feize and enroll his goods and chattels, by the view of lawful men; but yet fo as that nothing thereof be taken away, till it be fully known whether he owe any clear debt to the King: and then the King's debt fhall be paid, and the refidue fhall remain to the executors to perform the testament of the dead. And if nothing be owing to the King, all the goods fhall go to the use of the dead.

Ir any freeman die intestate, his goods shall be distributed by his nearest kindred and friends, and by the view of the church.

WIDOWS shall not be distrained to marry, if they are minded to live unmarried, provided they find fureties they will not marry without the King's affent, if they hold of the King, or without the confent of their lords of whom they hold.

No conftable or other bailiff fhall take any man's corn or other chattels, but he fhall forthwith pay for the fame, unlefs he may have refpite by confent of the feller.

THAT

Me conflabularius possit distringere aliquem militem ad dandum denarios pro culsodia castri si doluerit facere custodiam illam in propria persona, vel per alium probum hominem, si ipse eam facere non possit per rationabilem causan. Et si Rer eum durerit in exercitum, sit quietus de custodia secundum quantitatem temporis.

Ne bir bel ballívus Regis, bel aliquis alius, capiat equos bel careitas alicujus liberi hominis pro carriagio faciendo nifi er boluntate iplius.

Re Rer vel ballívus suus capiat alienum doscum ad castra vel ad alia agenda nisi per voluntatem ipsius sujus voscus fuerit.

Me Rer teneat terram eorum qui fuerint conditi de felonia, nili per unum annum s unum diem; sed tunc reddatur domino feodí.

ut omnes videllí de cetero penítus de ponantur in Camíligía e Medeceoge e per totam Angliam.

De

THAT no conftable shall distrain any knight to give money for the keeping of his castle, if he himself will do it in his own proper person, or by another sufficient man, if he may not do it himself for a reasonable cause. And if the King lead him in his army, he shall be discharged of castleward for the time.

No fheriff or bailiff of the King, nor any other perfon, shall take the horfes or carts of any freeman to make carriage without his leave.

THE King, nor his bailiffs, shall not take any man's wood for castles or other occasions, but by licence of him whose the wood is.

THAT the King do not hold the lands of them that be convicted of felony, longer than a year and a day; after which they shall be delivered to the lord of the fee.

THAT all wears from henceforth be utterly put down in Thames and Medway, and throughout all England.

Тнат

Ne breve quod vocatur Precipe de cetero fiat alicul de aliquo tenemento unde liver homo amittat curíam fuam.

Si quis tuerit diffailitus vel prolongatus per Regem fine judicio de terris, libertatibus, & jure suo, statim ei restituatur; & si contentio super hoc orta suerit, tunc inde disponatur per judicium FFCI. Baronum, & ut illi qui suerint dississifier per promotorem vel statrem Regis, certum habeant sine dilatione per judicium parium suorum in curia Regis. Et si Rex debeat habere terminum aliorum crucesignatorum, tunc archiepiscopus & episcopi facient inde judicium ad certam diem appellatione remoto.

De aliquid detur pro brevi inquilitionis de vita vel membris, sed libere concedatur sine pretio, & non negetur.

Si aliquis tenet de Rege per feodifirmam, per soccagium, vel burgagium: & de alio per servitium militis, dominus Rer non habebit custodiam militum de feodo alterius occasione burgagii, vel soccagii, vel feodifirme;

THAT the writ called Precipe be not, from henceforth, granted to any perfon of any freehold, whereby a freeman may lose his court.

Is any be diffeized or delayed by the King, without judgment, of lands, liberties, or other his right, he shall forthwith have restitution; and if any dispute arise upon it, it shall be determined by the judgment of the five and twenty barons. And such as have been diffeized by the King's father, or his brother, shall have right immediately by the judgment of their peers in the King's court. And if the King must have the term of others that had taken upon them the cross for the holy land, the archbishop and bishops shall give judgment therein, at a certain day to be prefixed, without appeal.

THAT nothing be given for a writ of inquifition of life or member, but that it be freely granted without price, and be not denied.

Is any hold of the King by feefarm, by foccage, or bargage, and of any other by knightsfervise, the King shall not have the custody of the heir, nor of his lands that are theolden of the fee of another, by reason of such burgage, foc-Y cage.

me; nec debet habere cultodiam burgagii, foccagii vel feodifirme: e quod liber homo non amittat militiam luam occasione parbarum sergantisarum, scuti de slis qui tenent aliquod tenementum, reddendo inde cultelso, vel sagittas vel hujusmodi.

De aliquis ballivus possi ponere aliquem ad legem simplici loquela sua ne testibus fidelibus.

Ne corpus liberi hominis capiatur nec imprilonetur, nec diffailietur, nec utlagetur, nec exuletur, nec aliquo modo deffruatur.

Mec Rer eat vel mittat super eum vi nisi per judicium parium suorum vel per legem terre.

Ne jus vendatur, vel differatur, vel vetitum sit.

Duod mercatores habeant falbum ire & venire ad emendum vel vendendum fine omnivus malis, per antiquas/& reftas confuetudines.

Ne

cage, or fee-farm; nor ought the King to have the cuftody of fuch burgage, foccage, or feefarm: and no freeman shall lose his degree of knighthood by reason of petty serie anties, as when a man holds lands, rendering therefore a knife, an arrow, or the like.

No bailiff shall put any man to his law upon his own bare faying, without faithful witneffes.

THAT the body of a freeman be not taken, or imprifoned, nor that he be diffeized, nor outlawed, nor exiled, nor any way deftroyed.

NOR that the King pass upon him, or imprison him by force, but only by the judgment of his peers, or by the law of the land.

THAT right be not fold, nor delayed, nor denied.

THAT merchants have liberty to go and come fafely to buy and fell, without any manner of evil tolls, by the old and lawful cuftoms.

¥ 2

Тнат

Re scutagium vel auxilium ponatur in regno, mis per commune concilium regni, dis ad corpus Regis redimendum & primogenitsim titum tuum militern faciendum & filiam tuam primogenitam senge maritandam, ¢ ad hoc siat rationabile auxilium. Simili modo siat de scutagiis ¢ auxilius, de civitatibus que inde habent libertates, ¢ ut civitatibus que inde habent libertates, ¢ ut civitat London, plene habeat antiquas fibertates ¢ liberas consuetudines suas tam per aquas quam per terras.

At ficent uniculque erire de regno, & redire, faba fide domini Regis, mil temporewerre per aliquod breve tempus propter communem utilitatem regni.

Si quis mutud fisquid accepetit a Judeis plus del minus, & moriatur antequam debitum illud foldatur, deditum fidn alticabic quamdiu heres infra etatem, de quocumque teneat. Et si deditum illud inciderit in fitamum Regis, Rer non capiet mili catallum hudd continetur in charta

Sí

THAT he efcuage or aid be haid upon the kingdom, but by the common-council of the kingdom; unlefs it be to redeem the King's perfon, or to make his eldeft fon a knight, or to marry his eldeft daughter once; and for thefe a seafonable aid shall be given. That it be in like manner with respect to tallages and aids from the city of London, and other cities that have privileges therein: and that the city of London may fully enjoy her antient liberties, and free outcoms, as well by water as by land.

THAT it shall be lawful for any man to go out of the kingdom, and to return, faving his allegiance to the King, unless it be in time of war for a short time, for the common profit of the realm.

Is any borrow money of a Jew, be is more or lefs, and die before the debt be paid, no interest shall be paid for the fame, so long as the heir is under age of whom sever he hold. And if the debt become due to the King, the King shall take no more than what is contained in the charter.

Ĭf

166 CAPITULAS.

Si quis moriatur & debitum debeat Judeis, uror eius habeat dotem luam: & fi liberi remanlerint, provideant iis neceflaria lecundum tenementum, & de refiduo foldatur debitum, falbo ferbitio dominorum. Simili modo fiat de aliis debitis, & ut cuftos terre reddat heredi cum ad plenam etatem perdenerit, terram fuam reflauratam fecundum quod rationabiliter poterit fuifinere de eritibus terre ejuldem de carucis & mainagiis.

Si quis tenuerit de aliqua escaeta sicut de honore Alallingfor & Nottingham, Bonon & Lancaster, & de alüs escaetis que sunt in manu Regis, & sunt baronie, & obserit, heres esus non dabit aliud relevium vel faciet aliud servitium quam faceret baroni, & ut Rex eddem modo eam teneat quo baro eam tenuit.

Ut fines qui faiti sunt pro dotibus, maritagiis, hereditatibus & amerciamentis, injuste & contra legem terre, omnino condonentur, vel fiat inde per judicium FFCI. baronum, vel per judicium majoris partis eorundem una cum archiepiscopo & aliis quos secum

IF any man die and owe money to the Jews, his wife fhall have her dower; and if he left children, neceffaries fhall be provided them according to the quantity of the freehold, and the refidue fhall go to pay off the debt, faving the fervices due to the lords. The like fhall be obferved in cafe of other debts; and when the heir comes of age, his guardian fhall reftore him his land as well ftocked as he could reafonably afford out of the profits of the land, coming in by the plough and the cart.

IF any man hold of any efcheat, as of the honour of Wallingford and Nottingham, Bonon and Lancaster, or of other escheats, which are in the King's hand and are baronies, and die, his heir shall pay no other relief, nor perform any other fervice than he should have paid and performed to the baron; and that the King shall hold such escheats as the barons held them.

THAT fines made for dowers, marriages, inheritances and amerciaments, wrongfully and contrary to the law of the land, be freely remitted, or ordered by the judgment of the five and twenty barons, or of the major part of them, together with the archbishop and such as he shall call to

ferum vocare voluerit, ita quod si aliquis vel aliquid de FECI. suerint in simili querela, amoveantur, ç alii loco illorum per residuos de FECI. substituantur.

Ausd oblides & charte reddantur que lis becats suerunt Regi in securitatem.

Ut illi qui fuerint extra forestam non verniant coram justitiarium de foresta per communes summonitiones, nisi sint in placito del plegii suerint; & ut prade consuetudines de forestis & de forestariis, & warennis, & bicecomitibus, & bidariis emendentur per FII. milites de quolidet comitatu qui debent eligi per prodos homines ejusdem comitatus.

Ht Rex amobeat penitus de wallia parentes & totam lequelam Gerardi de Aties quod de cetero balliam non habent, scilicet Engelardum, Andr. Petrum, & Sigonem de Cances, Sigonem de Cygon, Mattheum de Martino et fratres ejus, et Gelfrid nepotem ejus, et Philippum de Marke.

Et

A R T I C L IE S, &c. 160

•to him; provided that if one or more of the five and twenty Mave themfelves my like complaint, what then he or they shall be removed, and others put in their rooms by the felidue of the five and twenty.

THAT the holtages this deeds be reitored, which were delivered to the King for his fecurity.

THAT they that live out of the foreft be not obliged to come before the juiltice of the foreft by common functions, tinlefs they be parties for pletiges rand that the evil contoms of the forefts and forefters, warrens and fhertiffs, and ponds, be redreffed by twelve knights of each county, who thall be cholen by the good men of "the county.

THAT the King temove wholly from the baififfwick the Rindred and whole dependance of GERARD'D'ATIES, that hereafter they have no "Bailiffwick to wit; ENGELAND, ANDREW, PETER, "and GIGO DE CANCES, GIGO DE CYOON, MATE THEWDE MARTINO and his brethren, and GELFRID "his nephew, and PHILIP DE MARK.

Z

And

Et ut Rex amoveat alienigenos milites, fipendiarios, ballistarios et ruttarios, et servientes qui venerunt cum equis et armis ad nocumentum regni.

Ut Rer faciat jufficiarios, conflabularios, & vicecomites & ballivos de talibus qui sciant legem terre & eam velint hene observare.

Ut barones qui fundaderunt abbatias unde hadent chartas regum del antiquam tenuram, hadeant cultodiam earum cum dacaderint.

Si Rer Malenles distailierit vel elongaverit de terris, vel livertativus, vel de revus aliis in Anglia vel in Mallia, eis statim sine placito reddantur: & si sus statim ine placito reddantur: & si sus fuis fuis vel elongati de tenementis suis Anglicis per patrem vel fratrem Regis sine judicio parium suorum, Rer eis sine dilatione justitiam erhibebit eo modo quo erhibet Anglicis justitiam de tenementis suis Angl. secundum legem Angl. & de tenementis Mall. secundum legem Mall. & de tenementis Parchie secundum

AND that the King put away the foreign foldiers, flipendiaries, flingers, and troopers and their fervants, who came with horses and arms to the number of the realm.

THAT the King make jufficiaries, conflables, fherriffs and bailiffs, of men that know the law of the land, and will caufe it to be well observed.

THAT barons who have founded abbies, for which they have charters of Kings, or antient tenures, fhall have the cuftody of them when they are vacant.

IF the King has diffeized the Welchmen, or efloined them from lands or liberties, or of other things in England or Wales, let them prefently be reftored to them without plea: and if they have been deffeized or efloined from their Englifh tenements by the King's father or his brother, without the judgment of their peers, the King shall without delay do them justice, as he does justice to Englishmen of their English tenements according to the law of England, and of Welsh tenements in the marches according to the law

Digitized by Google

1,72, CAPITULA, &c.

facundum, legen. Darchies Apem, facient Wallenfes Revie fuis.

ut Rer reddat filium Lewelini Enreterea omnes oblides de Mallia, & chartas que ei Isberats cusrunt in lecuritatem pacis.

Mt Rev facial Regi Scotie de oblidibus reddendis & de libertatibus luis & jure sua secundum formam quam secit bar. Angl. nis aliter ese debeat per chartas quas Rev habet per judicium archiepiscopi & alibrum quos secum-bocare voluerit.

Et omnes fareste que sunt afarestate per reusem tempore sus deassorestent, & ita stat de ripariis que per ipsum Regen sunt in de= feplo.

Omnes autem istas consuetudines & livertates, quas Rer concesst regno tenendas quantum ad se pertinet, erga suos omnes de regno tam clerici quam laici observabunt quantum ad se pertinent erga suos.

Dec

law of the marches. In like manner the Welfhmen shall do to the King and his subjects.

THAT the King reftore LEWELIN's fon, and all the Welfh hoftages, and the deeds that were delivered to him for the fecurity of the peace.

THAT the King do right to the King of Scotland, concerning reftoring of hoftages, and his liberties and right, according to the form of the agreement with his barons of England, unlefs it, ought to be otherwife by virtue of fome deeds which the King has, by the judgment of the archbishop and others, whom he shall think fit to call to him.

THAT all forefts that have been afforefted by the King in his own time, be difafforefted; and to of banks, which by the King himfelf have been put in defence.

ALL these customs and liberties which the King has granted to the kingdom, to hold and keep for his own part towards his men, all clerks and laymen of the kingdom shall observe and keep their parts towards their men.

• •

THIS

173

174

wer eff forma lecuritatis ad oblerbandans nacem & libertates inter Reaem & reanim. Barones, eligent EEA. barones de regnoquas valuerint. qui debent pro totis vicibus. fuis observare, tenere, & facere observari vacem, & libertates quas dominus Rer eis cancessit. & charta sua confirmabit. Ita. his. " Duod fi Rer. vel juffitiarii, vel ballive Regis vel allouis de ministris suis in aliquo erga aliquem deliquerit. Vel aliquem articulorum pacis, aut lecuritatis transpressus fuerit. & delictum offentum fuerit 301. baronibus de predictis FFA. Baronum : illi 721. barones accedent ad dominum Recem bel ad juffitiarium luum, fi Rer fuerit ertra regnum, proponentes et erceflum, & ve= tent ut erceffum illum fine dilatione faciat emendari. Et fi Rer vel justitiarius illud non emendaberit. fi Rer' fuerit ertra regnum, infra rationabile tempus determinandam in charta, preditti ICI. referent caufam illam ad readuos de illis FFCL barombus, æ illi HET. tum communia.* totius terre Diftringent e gravabunt Regem modis am-

Communa, C. M. Ep. Sar.

minus

ARTICLES &C 175

This is the form of the fecurity for keeping peace and the liberties betwixt the King and the kingdom. The barons shall chuse five and twenty barons of the realm, whom they will themfelves, upon whom it shall be incumbent, that with all their might they observe and keep, and cause to be observed and kept, the peace and liberties which the King has granted to them, and confirmed by his charter; to wit, " That if the King, or his " juffices, or bailiffs, or any of his ministers, " offend any perfon contrary to any of the faid " articles, or transgress any article of this peace " and fecurity, and that fuch offence be made " known to four of the faid five and twenty " barons; those four barons shall go to the King, " or to his justiciary, if the King be out of the " realm, declaring to him that fuch an abufe is " committed, and shall defire him to cause it " fpeedily to be redreffed. And if the King, " or (if he be out of the realm) his jufficiary. " do not redrefs it, those four barons shall with-" in a reasonable time, to be limited in the char-" ter, refer the matter to the refidue of the five " and twenty barons. And those five and twenty. " with the commonalty of all the land, shall dif-"trefs the King all the ways they can, to wit, " by feizing his caftles, his lands and poffeffi-" ons.

176 OC APPIITOUL A, &c.

~T.C

Amayolibus vocerint : Ichicet ver cautionem talltotum, tettätum pollemonem a allis moois quibus poterint, donec fuerit enfen-Datum fecunoim arbitrum eorum, Tarba metiona bomini Regis a Regine, "a' liverotim horim. 'Et 'tum' fuerit 'emendatim. intendant vomino Regi ficut prius. Et quicunque voluerit de cetre, jurabit ad predicta 'erequenda, 'patitutum mandatis preditto-'rum FFA. baronum, e gravaturum Regem, pro polle fuo cum plis. Et Rer publice "& libere vabit licentiam jurandi 'tuili= het aut jurate voluerit. E nulli unquam jurare prohibebit. Omnes autem illos de terra qui loonte lua, 'a per le jurare voluerint FEA. barombus de distringendo e gravando Regem cum ils cuntis Rer faciet iurare eisdem de mandato suo sicut predittum est.

Item * si aliquis de preditis FEI. baronum decesserit, vel a terra recesserit, vel aliquo alio modo impeditus fuerit quominus ista predita possi erequi, qui residui fue-

* Sic & M. Ch. Ep. Sar.

tint

" and by what other means they can, till it be " redreffed according to their good liking, faving " the perfon of our lord the King, and of the " Queen and of their children. And when it is " redreffed, they shall be subject to the King as " before." And whoever will may fwear to put these things in execution, viz. To obey the commands of the faid five and twenty barons, and to diffress the King to the utmost of his power with them. And the King shall give public and free liberty for any man to fwear that will, and shall never prohibit any to swear. And all those of the nation, who will voluntarily of their own accord fwear to the five and twenty barons to diffrefs the King with them, the King himself shall iffue his precept, commanding them to fwear as aforelaid.

ITEM, if any of the faid five and twenty barons die, or go out of the realm, or be any other way hindered from performing these things, the refidue of the five and twenty shall chuse ano-

A a

ther

tint de FEA. eligent alium loco infing pro arbitrio fuo. aui fimili modo erit iuratus aus & ceteri. In onmibus autem que isis FFA. baronfbus committantur erequenda, si forte wsi EFCI. presentes suerint a inter le Amer re aliqua discordaderint, vel aliqui er eis vocati voluerint vel nequeant intereffe. ratum habebitur & firmum quod major pars er eis providerit bel preceperit, ac si omnes FECI. in boc consensisient. Et predicti FFA. jurabunt quod omnia anteditta fideliter observabunt, & pro toto posse suo facient observari *. Preterea Rer faciet eos lecuros per chartas archiepilcopi e epilcoporum & magní Pandulphí, quod níhil impetrabit a domino papa per quod aliqua isfarum conventionum revocetur, vel minatur. Et 's aliquid tale impetraderit, reputetur irritum cinane, & nunquam eo utatur. Sine Dato +.

* D. Matt. Par. & His & Ch. M. Ep. Sar. fine dato.

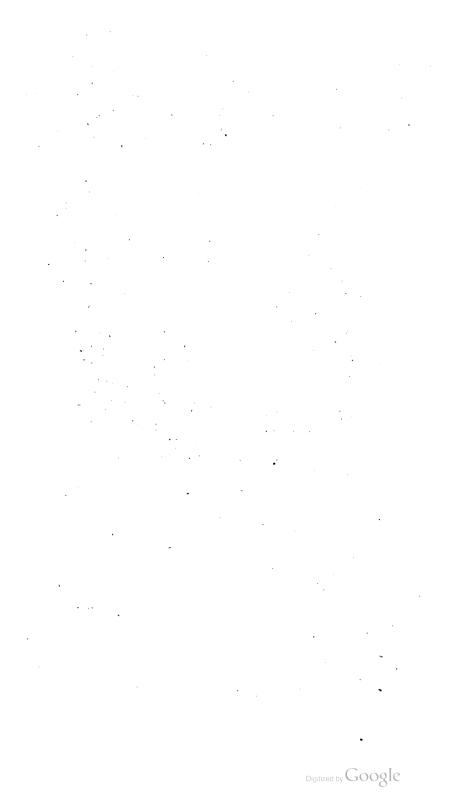
ARTICLES,

ther, whom they think beft, in his place, who fhall be fworn as the reft are. And in all matters referred to those five and twenty barons, if they happen to be all prefent, and differ amongst themfelves : or if any of them being thereto appointed, will not or cannot come, what the major part of them shall agree upon and enjoin shall be valid. as if all the five and twenty had agreed in it. And the faid five and twenty shall swear, that they will faithfully obferve and keep the articles aforefaid, and with all their might cause them to be observed. Moreover the king shall give them the fecurities of the archbishop and bishops, and master PANDULPHUS, that he will not obtain any thing from the pope, whereby any of these articles of agreement may be revoked or diminished. And if any fuch thing be obtained, that it be reputed void and of none effect, nor shall ever be made use of.

179

&c.





`

•

· · · · · ·

Diploma Regium : five Ordinationes Johannis Regis Angliæ, queis ftatuit quid Nobiles, quid Plebeii obfervare debeant, ad pacem & tranquillitatem Regni ftabiliendam*.

L M D D A R par la arace de Deu Roi Dengleterre, as arcevelkes. 88 evelkes, as abbez, as contes, as barons, as Juffiles, as forefliers, as vilcontes, as prevoz, as ministres, & a toz fes ballliz, & fes feels, faluz. Sachiez que nos par la grace de Deu & pur le saubement de nostre alme, & de toz nos ancestres, & de nos eirs. & de lenor de Deu, & le saubement de seinte iglise, & lamendement de nostre regne, par le consel de noz enorez peres larcevelke Effievene de Santorbire primat de tote Engleterre & cardinal de Rome, & larcevelke Benri de Diveline, & levelke Willaume de Londres, leveske Pieres de Wincestre, levelke Jocelin de 23a, levelke bu de Michole +, levelke Gautier de Mice-

* Anno Chr. 1215.

† Lincolne.

ceffre,

THE!

GREAT CHARTER.

O F

KING JOHN;

A true copy from the

ORIGINAL FRENCH.

OHN, by the grace of Gon King of England, to the archbishops, bishops, abbots, earls, barons, justices, foresters, sheriffs, prevofts, ministers, and all his bailiffs and his lieges, greeting. Know ye, that we by the grace of Gop, and for the faving of our foul, and the fouls of all our anceftors, and of our heirs, and for the honour of GOD, and the fafety of holy church, and for the amendment of our government, by the advice of our honoured fathers. STEPHEN, archbishop of Canterbury, primate of all England, and cardinal of Rome; HENRY. archbishop of Dublin, WILLIAM, bishop of London, PETER, bishop of Winchester, Jocelin. bishop of Bath, Hugh, bishop of Lincoln, WAL-TER, bishop of Worcester, WILLIAM, bishop of Chefter, BENEDICT, bishop of Rochefter, and mafter

184 MAGNA CHARTA.

centre, levelke IIII. de Centre, & levelke Beneft de Rovecestre, & maistre Pandol sodiacre nostre seignor lapossoire, & nostre ami frere Anner maistre de la chevalerie del temple de Engleterre, & de nos varons IIIII. le marescal conte de Pembroke, IIIII. conte de Salisvires, IIIII. conte de Alarenne, IIIII. conte de Arondel, Alain de Galwche, constable d'Escoce, IIIarin le fiz Gerod, Peres le fiz Herebert, Hubert de Borc senssten de Peitou, Huge de Ruevile, Matheu le fiz Herebert, Thomas Basset, Alain Basset, Philippe Daubeigns, Robert de Ropelee, Johan Parescal, & Inhan le fiz wee, & de nos autres feels.

Premierement que nos abons ottie * a Deu le confermons par celle nostre presente chartre, por noz, « por nos eirs a toz iorz que les Lysistes de Engleterre, seront franthes « aient lor dreitures franches « enterines « plenieres, « bolon que cili seit garde la que chose apert, par co que nos otriames par nostre pure volunte « de gre les franchiles des elections que len tienent par plus

* Otries

grant

mafter PANDULPH, fub-deacon of our Lord the apoftle, and of our friend brother ANNER, mafter of the order of knights templars in England; and by the advice of our barons, WILLIAM, earl marfhal earl of Pembroke, WILLIAM, earl of Salifbury, WILLIAM, earl of Warren, WILLIAM, earl of Arundel, ALAN of Galloway, conftable of Scotland, WARIN FITZ-GERARD, PETER FITZ-HERBERT, THOMAS BASSET, ALAN BAS-SET, PHILIP D'AUBENIE, ROBERT DE ROPELEE, JOHN MARSHAL, and JOHN FITZ-HUCH, and by the advice of other lieges:

HAVE in the first place granted to GOD, and confirmed by this our prefent charter, for us and for our heirs for ever, That the churches of England shall be free, and shall enjoy their rights and franchifes entirely and fully: and this our purpofe is, that it be observed, as may appear by our having granted, of our mere and free will, that elections should be free (which is reputed to be a very great and very necessfary privilege of the churches of England) before the difference arose B b

186 MAGNA CHARTA

geant « par plus necessaire as yglifes de Engteterrs, devant que la descorde suff commensie entre nos « nos barons, « la consirmames par nostre chartre et parchacames que ele su consirmes par nostre seignor lapostoire Innocent le tiers, laquelle nos garderons et volons que nostre eir la gardent toz jorz en bone sei.

III. Ros abon encore otrie a tos les france homes de nosse rene pur nos. et pur nos eirs a toz iorz totes les tranchiles qui de soz sunt escrites, qu'il les aient et les tiegnent il et lor eir de nos et de nos eirs, se acuns de nos contes, bo de nos barons, bo des altres qui tienent de nos en chief par fervise de chavalier mora, et quant il sera mors et ses eirs sera de plein aage et debra relief, ait fon heritage par l'ancien relief. co est a savier li rie, ou li eir del conte, de baronie contal entiere par C. livres li eirs ou li eir del baron de la barone par C. libres: li eirs ou it eir de chevalier de fie de chevalier entier par C. fol au plus, et qui meins debra meins doinst folon lanciene costume del fie.

Øĺ

MAGNA CHARTA 187

betwist us and our berons, and by our liaving confirmed the fame by our charter, and by our having procured it moreover to be confirmed by our lord the apoftle INNOCENT the third. Which privilege we will maintain: and our will is, that the fame be faithfully maintained by our heirs for ever.

We have also granted to all the freemen of our kingdom, for us and for our heirs for ever, all the liberties hereafter mentioned, to have and to hold to them and their heirs of us and our heirs. If any of our earls, our barons, or others that hold of us in chief by knight-fervice, die; and at the time of his death his heir be of full age, and relief be due, he shall have his inheritance by the antient relief; to wit, the heir or heirs of an earl, for an entire earldom, C. pounds; the heir or heirs of a baron, for an entire barony, C. marks; the heir or heirs of a knight, for a whole knight's fee, C. shillings at most: and where lefs is due, lefs shall be paid, according to the antient customs of the faveral tenures.

Bbz

. Jp

188 MAGNA CHARTA.

IV. Si le cirs d'aucun di tels sera dedens aage, et sera en garde; quand il sera parbenu a aage ait son heritage sans relief et sans fin.

V. Les gardeors de la terree de tel eir qui sera dedens aage ne pregne de la terre de leir fors reignables, eistues et reignables coltumes, et reignables services, et ce senz defiruiement, et senz dast des homes et des choses.

VI. Et se nos avons livree la garde de la terre daucun itel a visconte o a acune altre qui nos det respondre des eistues de la terre, et cs de la garde fera destruiement o gas, nos prendrons de celui amende, et la terre fera livree a deus leals prodeshomes de cel fei qui respoignent des eistues a nos, o celui que nos comanderons.

VII. Et le nos abons done o bendu a aucun la garde de la terre de aucun itel, et cil enfra defiruiement o walt par de cele garde, et seit libre a deus leials sage prodeshomes et dicele que i nous respoignent, s come nos abons debant dit.

VIII. Et

MAGNA CHARTA 180

Is the heirs of any fuch be within and in ward, they shall have their inheritance when they come of age without relief, and without fine.

THE guardians of the land of fuch heirs being within age, shall take nothing out of the land of the heirs, but only the reasonable profits, reatonable customs, and reasonable fervices, and that without making destruction or waste of men or goods.

AND if we shall have committed the custody of the land of any such heir to a sheriff, or any other who is to account to us for the profits of the land, and that such committee make destruction or waste, we will take of him amends, and the land shall be committed to two lawful and good men of that see, who shall account for the profits to us, or to such as we shall appoint.

AND if we shall give or fell to any person, the custody of the lands of any such heir, and such donee or vendee make destruction or waste, he shall lose the custody, and it shall be committed to two lawful, sage, and good men, who shall account to us for the same, as aforesaid.

)

AND

VIII. Et fi le gardior tant die eans il aura la garde de telle texte, fostinges lee meifons, les vidicus, les pars, les estants, les molins, et les altres choles qui apartient a cele terre de eistues, et de celle meinres terre: et rendra al sie quant sera parbenus en plain aage sa terre tote estore de charues, de granges, solon quoque li tens de la gaignerie requera, et les sillues de la terre potront mulurablement solutier reisnabiment.

1X. Li eir scient marie sans desparagement eist ne purquant que siny que 16 mariages seit set, seit mostre as prochains del lianage de cel eir.

X. La bede empres la mort de son mati namtenant et sans grebance ait son mariage et son heritage, ne riens ne doink pour son mariage, ne pour son doaire, ne pour son heritage que elle et ses maris tindrent, al for de la mort del mari, & seit en la maison de son mari puis quil sera mort rl. jorz dedens les quels jorz li seit les doairez livrez.

XI. Mule where ne leite destreite de sei marier tant dis come ele doldra vivre sanz mari

And the guardian, whill be has cultody of the heir's land, that maintain the houses, ponds, parks, pools, mills, and other apparenances to the land, out of the purfits of the land inferf; and thall reftore to the heir, when he thall be of full age, his land well flocked, with ploughs, barns, and the like, as it was when he received ir, and as the profits will reafonably afford.

HERE shall be married without disparagement; infomuch, that before the marriage be contracted, the persons that are next of kin m the heir, be made acquainted with it.

A widow after the death of her hufband, fhall prefently and without oppreffion, have her marriage and her inheritance; nor fhall give any thing for her marriage, nor for her dower, nor for her inheritance, which fae and her hufband were feized of the day of her hufband's death: and the fhall remain in her hufband's houfe forty days after his death; within which time her dower fhall be affigned her.

No widow shall be compelled to marry if she be defirous to live single, provided she give security

mari ell ne purquant que ele face seurte que ele ne se marira sanz nostre otrei, se ele tinent de nos o senz lotrei de son seignor de qui elle tient, se ele tient dautrui.

XII. Me nos ne nostre bailli ne seiseron terre ne rente del dettor pour aucune dette tandis com sis chattels sossicent a paier la dette, ne si plege ne seront destroit tant dis come le chevetaigne dettor sossira a la dette paier. Et se le chevetaigne detor na de quei paier sa dette, respoigne li plege de la dette. Et si volent asent les terres, « les rentes del detter jusquil asent restorement de la dette quil ont devant pase pour lus; se le chevetaigne detor ne monstre quil en est autte vers cels pleges.

XIII. Se aucuns a emprunte as Jues * plus o meins, & muert devant quil lor alt paie lor avoir, ne croile mie la dette tant dis com li eirs lera dedens aage, & le cele dette vient en nos mains nos nen prendron que le chatte + que nos troveron en la charte.

* Id ef. Juifs. * Id eft, le capital, le principal. XIV. Et.

curity not to marry without our leave, if the hold of us, or without the lord's leave of whom the holds, if the hold of any other.

WE nor our builtifs will not feize the lands or rents of a debtor for any debt fo long as his goods are fufficient to pay the debt: nor fhall the pledges be diffrained upon whilf the principal debtor is able to pay the debt. But if the principal debtor have not wherewith to pay the debt, the pledges fhall answer for it: and if they will, they fhall have the lands and rents of the debtor till they have received the debt which they paid for him, if the principal debtor cannot fhew that he is quit againft his pledges.

Ir any perfons have borrowed money of Jews, more or lefs, and die before they have paid the debt, the debt shall not grow whilst the heir is under age; and if such debt become due to us, we will take no more than the goods expressed in deed.

Cc

AND

ID2

XIV. Et se aucun muret, ¢ deit dette as Jues, sa seme ait son doaire, ¢ ne paiet nient de cele dette, ¢ se li ensant qui remaindront del mort sont dedenz aage, porbeu lor seit lor estobeir raisnablement solonc le tenement qui su del mort, ¢ del remanant seit paiee la dette, saus le service des seign= ors, ¢ en tel maniere seit seit de dettes que l'on deit a altres que a Jues.

XV. Len ne mettra nul elcuage *, ne ale + én nostre regne, fors par commun conseil de nostre regne, fors a nostre reimbre ‡ ¢ a nostre ainzne fiz faire chevalier, ¢ a nostre ainznee fille marier une feiz; ¢ a cestes choses ne face len ale se raisonable non.

XVI. En cele mainere seit feit daies de la cite de Londres, & estre co la cite de Londres ait totes ses ancienes costumes, & ses franchiles, & par mer & par aigue.

* F. tailles + aide.

\$ Id eft, ad nofirum corpus redimendum fi in bello capti fuerImus, ut infra.

XVIII, Mos

AND if any die, and owe a debt to the Jews, his wife fhall have her dower, and fhall be charged with no part of the debt; and if the children of the deceased person be within age, their reasonable eftovers shall be provided them, according to the value of the estate which their ancestor had; and the debt shall be paid out of the refidue, faving the services due to the lord. In like manner shall it be done in cases of debts owing to other persons that are not Jews.

WE will impose no escuage * nor aids within our realm, but by the common council of our realm, except for our ransom, and for the making our eldest fon a knight, and for marrying our eldest daughter once: and for these purposes there shall but a reasonable aid be required.

IN like manner shall it be done within the city of London: and moreover, the city of London shall have all her antient customs and liberties by land and water.

* Taxes for the helmet, or war,

CG2

Wa

XVII. Mos volons eltre co, & otriens que totes les altres citez & li borc, & les viles, & li port aient en totes lor franchiles, « lor franches costumes.

XVIII. Et aient le commun conseil dei renne. De laie a alleeir altrement que as treis cast auf font devant dit. e lescuare a seer ferons comondre les arcevelkes, les evelkes. les abbez. les comtes. les greignors harons : chacun par lei par nos lettres. æ effre ed ferond fomonore en commun par nos bifsontes. a par nos baillis tos ceu quis de nos tiensut en chief a certain joz, co est al terme De chi foos al mains e a certain lieu. « nome= rous la cause en totes lettres de cesse so. monse. Et mant la somonse sera ist seite voilt li afaires avant, au jor affiane folon le confeil di cels qui leront prefent ja feit co que ne scient das venu tuit cil qui furent formania.

XIX. Hos notrions a nul des ore en evant quil pregne ale de les frans homes fors a lon cors raimbre * & a lon ainzne fiz

* Vid. Jupra.

faire

WE will moreover and grant, that all other cities, and boroughs, and towns, and ports, have, in all respects, their liberties and free cuftoms.

AND as for coming to the common council of the kingdom, and for affeffing aids (except in the three cafes aforefaid) and as for the affeffing of efcuage, we will caufe to be fummoned the archbifhops, bifhops, abbots, earls, and the greater barons, each in particular by our letters; and moreover, we will caufe to be fummoned in general, by our fheriffs, and bailiffs, all that hold of us in chief, at a certain day; to wit, forty days after at leaft, and at a certain place; and in our faid letters we will express the caufe of the fummons. And when the fummons shall be for made, bufiness shall go on at the day affigned, by the advice of fuch as are present, though all that are fummoned do not appear.

WE will not allow for the future, that any take aid of his free-men, but only to ranfom his perfon, to make his eldeft fon a knight, and to marry his eldeft

faire chevalier, & a sa fille ainznee marter une seiz & a co ne seit feit aie se raisnable non.

XX. Muls ne seit destreinz a faire grenor servise de sieu de chevalier o daltre franc tenement, que tant come il tient & deit.

XXI. Li commun plait ne suient mie nostre cort, mais saient tenu en alcun certain lieu.

XXII. Les reconussances de nodele deffaisine de mort dancessre, & de darrain prelentment ne leiente prises fors en lor contez & celle maniere: nos o nostre chevetains justicieres se nos sumes fors del regne envierons deus justices par chascun conte par III. feiz en lan qui o quatre des chevilers de chascun conte elleuz par le conte pregnent el conte, & el jor del conte, & en certain lieu les devant dites asses, & se les devant dites assesses ne puent estre prises el jor del conte, tant chevaliers & franchement tenanz remaignent de cels qui furent present al conte en icel jor par qui pusses justices estre fait

eldest daughter once; and for these purposes there shall but a reasonable aid be given.

NONE shall be distrained to do greater service for a knight's fee, or for any other frank-tenement than what is due by his tenure.

Соммом pleas shall not follow our court, but shall be held in a certain place.

RECOGNIZANCES of novel diffeifin, mordancester, and darrein presentment, shall be taken no where but in their proper counties, and in this manner: We, or our chief justice (if ourfelves be out of the realm) will fend two justices through every county four times a year; who, with four knights of every county, to be chosen by the county, shall take the faid affizes in the county, at a day when the county-court is held, and in a certain place: and if the faid affizes cannot be taken upon that day, fo many knights and free tenants of them that were present in the countycourt that day, so may give a good judgment,

fait soffaument, solon co qui li afaire sera plus grant o plus petit.

XXIII. Frans hom ne let amerciez pour petit forfit fors solon la maniere del forfait e pour le grant forfait leit amerciez solonc la grandesce del forfait saus con contenement, e li marcheant ensemt saude la marchendise. Li vilaint ensemt seit amerciez saals son gaagnage sil chiet en nostre merci, e nule des devant dites mercis ne sera mile fors par le serement de prodomes e des leaus des bisnez.

XXIV. Li conte et li baron ne seient ametciez fors par lor pers et solonc la maniere vel forfeit.

XXV. Mus clers ne soit amerciez de son lai tenement, fors solonc la maniere des altres qui debant sunt dit, et nun pas solonc la quantite de la rente de siguile*.

XXVI. Ne ville ne home ne seit defireiz a faire ponz a rivieres, fors cil qui ancienement et par dreit les devent faire.

> * F. des Iglife, ou de Liglife. XXVII. DUS

judgment, according as the concern may be greater or lefs.

A FREEMAN shall not be amerced for a little offence, but according to the manner of his offence; and for a great offence he shall be amerced according to the greatness of his offence, faving his contenement; and fo a merchant faving his merchandize; and a villain in like manner shall be amerced faving his tyainage, if he fall into our mercy: and none of the faid amercements shall be affeered, but by oath of good and lawful men of the vicinage.

An earl and a baron shall not be amerced but by their peers, and according to the manner of their offence.

No clerk shall be amerced but according to his lay-fee, and in like manner as others aforefaid, and not according to the quantity of his churchliving.

No ville not any man shall be distrained to make bridges over rivers, but where they antiently have, and of right, ought to make them.

Dd

No

20Ì



XXVII. Muls vilquents ne conestables ne nostre coroncor ne nostre altre bailli ne tiegnent les plais de nostre corone.

XXVIII. Chalcune comtez, hundres, wapulzac, et treingues, loient as ancienes fermes lens nul croilement, fors nos demeins maniers.

XXIX. Se aucuns qui tient lai fie de nos muezt et nosse visquents, • altres nosse bailiz, monstre nos lettres obeztes de nosse femonse de la dette que li mozt nos debeit, leisse a nosse visconte o a nostre bailli atachier et endzedez les chatels del mozt, qui seront trobe el lai sie a la bailliance dicelle dette, que li mozs nos debeit par deue de leaus homes, eiss ne par quant que riens ne seit oste jusque nos seit paice la dette qui sera coneue : et li remanant seit saisse as erecutozs a faire le testament del mozt : et si ne nos deident rien tot li chatel seient otrie al mozt, saudes les reignables parties de sa feme et de sensans.

XXX. Se aucuns frans huem muert sens tessament, lí chatel sesent departs par les mains

No fheriffs, conftables, coroners, nor other our bailiffs, fhall hold the pleas of our crown.

ALL counties, hundreds, wapentakes and tithings, shall be at the antient farms without being raifed, except our own demesse mannors.

IF any that holds of us a lay-fee die, and our fheriffs, or other our bailiffs fhew our letters patents of fummons for a debt which the deceafed owed to us, our fheriff or bailiff may well attach and inventory the goods of the dead, which fhall be found upon his lay-fee, to the value of the debt which the deceafed owed to us, by the view of lawful men, yet fo as nothing be removed till fuch time as the debt, which fhall be found to be due to us, be paid; and the refidue fhall go to the executors to perform the teftament of the dead: and if nothing be owing to us, all, his goods fhall go to the ufe of the dead, faving to his wife and children their reafonable parts.

Is any freeman die intestate, his goods shall be divided by the hands of his near kindred and D d 2 friends

mains des machans parens et de ses amis par la veue de seinte iglise, saves les dettes a chascun que le mozt loz devoit.

XXXI. Hus de nos conestables ne de nos altres bailiz ne pregne les bles, ne les altres chatels daucun, se maintenant nen paie les deniezs, sil nen puet avez respit par bolente del vendeo2.

XXXII. Mus consilables ne destreigne nul chevalier a doner deniers pour la garde del chastel, sil lavoit faite en sa propre persone u par altre prodome sil ne la puet faire par aucune reignable achaisun *, & se nos le menons o enveions en ost, si sera quites dicele garde tant dis cunt si sera par nos enlost.

XXXIII. NUS viscontes ne nostre bailiz ne altre ne pegne les chevals ne les charettes daucun franc home, pour faire cariage, fors par la volente de cel franc home.

* Id eff, raifonable occasion.

XXXIV. De

friends by the view of holy church, faving to every one their debts which the dead owed them,

NONE of our constables, nor other our bailiffs shall take the corn, nor other the goods of any perfon without paying for the fame prefently, unlefs he have time given him by confent of the vendor.

Our conftables shall distrain no man who holds by knight-fervice, to give money for castleguard, if he has performed it himself in proper perform it himself for some reasonable cause: and if we lead him, or send him into the army, he shall be discharged of castle-guard for so long time as he shall be with us in the army.

Our fheriffs, our bailiffs, or others, fhall not take the horles nor carts of any freeman to make carriage, but by leave of fuch freeman.

NEITHER

XXXIV. Re nos ne nostre baillie ne prenbrons altruí bois a nos chastels, o a nos altres obres faire, fors par la volente de celui cui sera li bois.

XXXV. Nos ne tendrons les terres de cels qui seront convencue de felonie, fozs un an & un joz, & adons les rendzons as seignozs des fiez.

XXXVI. Tot li kidel seien dici en adant ose del tot en tot de Tamise & de Bedoine, e par tote Engleterre, sozs par la cossiere de la mer.

XXXVII. Li blies qui est apelez plecipz des ci en abant ne seit faiz a nul daucun tenement, dont frans hoem peust peldle sa cozt.

XXXVIII. Une mesure de vin seit par tot nostre regne, & une mesure de cerveile, & une mesure de ble, co est li quartiers de Londzes, & une lesse de dzas temz, & de rasez, & de habergiez, co est deus aunes dedenz

NEITHER ourfelves nor our bailiffs fhall take another man's wood for our caftles, or other occafions, but by his leave whofe wood it is.

WE will hold the lands of fuch as shall be convicted of felony but a year and a day, and then we will reftore them to the lords of the fees.

ALL wears shall, from this time forward, be wholly taken away in Thames and Medway, and throughout all England, except upon the seacoast.

THE writ called Precipe henceforth shall be made to none out of any tenement, whereby a freeman may lose his court.

ONE measure of wine shall be used throughout our kingdom, and one measure of ale, and one measure of corn, to wit, the London quart. And there shall be one breadth of dyed cloths, russes, and haubergets, to wit, two ells within the lists: and

vedenz lilles, & des peis * leit enlement come des mulures +.

XXXIX. Reins ne seit vone ne pis des ci en avant pour le brief del enquesse de vie, o de membres de aucun, mais seit otree en pur don, & ne seit esconduit.

XL. Se aucuns tient de nos par feuferme o par lokage, & tient terre daltrui par lerbile de chevalier, nos n'aurons mie la garpe del eir, ne de la terre qui est daltrui sie par achaïson de cele seuserme, o del sokage, o del boggage. Me n'aurons la garde de cele seuserme, o del sokage, o del boggage, se cele seuserme ne deit service de chevalier.

XLI. Nos n'aurons la garde del cir ne de la terre dalcun, que il tient daltrui par servile de chevalier, par achaison daucune petite serjanteri, quil tient de nos par servise de rendre saettes, o cotelz, o tels choses.

* Pois.

+ Mejures.

XLII. Ruls

and concerning weights, it shall be in like manner as of measures.

NOTHING shall be given or taken henceforth for a writ of inquisition of life or member, but it shall be granted freely and shall not be denied.

IF any hold of us by fee-farm, or by foccage, and hold likewife land of others by knight-fervice, we will not have the cuftody of the heir, nor of the land which is of the fee of another, by reafon of fuch fee-farm, foccage, or burgage, unlefs fuch fee-farm owe knight-fervice,

 W_E will not have the wardship of the heir, nor of the land of any person, which he holds of another by knight-service, by reason of any petit service of giving us arrows, knives, or such like,

E e

No

XLII. Muls bailli3 ne mette des cien abant alcun a lei par la fimple parole, fozs par bons tesmoins amenes aice.

XLIII. Ruis frans hom ne sera pris, ne emprilonez, ne diffailiz, ne ullagiez, ne eilfilliez, ne destruiz, ne aucune maniere, ne soz lui virons ne n'enveierons, fozs par leal jugement de ses pers, o par la lei de la terre.

XLIV. A nulli ne bendrons, a nulli ne fcondirons ne ne proloignerons dreir ne jultile.

XLV. Cuit li marchant aient sauf & seur eistir d'Engleterre, & venir en Engleterre & demozez, & alez par Engleterre, par terre & par eaue a vendze & a chatez, sans totes males totes par les ancienes dzettes coltumes, sozs el tens de guerre, cil ki sunt de la terre qui nos guerroie, & se tel sunt trove en nostre terre el commancement de la guerre, soient atachie sans domage de loz cozs & de loz choseo, julqu'il seit seu de nos o de nostre chevetein justifier coment li marcheant de la nostre terre seront traitie, qui donc

No bailiff for the time to come shall put any man to his law upon his bare word, without good witneffes produced.

No freeman shall be taken, nor imprisoned, nor diffeized, nor out-lawed, nor exiled, nor deftroyed in any manner; nor will we pass upon him, nor condemn him, but by the lawful judgment of his peers, or by the law of the land.

WE will fell to none, we will deny nor delay to none right and juffice.

ALL merchants may, with fafety and fecurity, go out of England, and come into England, and ftay, and pais through England by land and water, to buy and fell without any evil tolls, paying the antient and rightful duties, except in time of war; and then they that are of the country with whom we are at war, and are found here at the beginning of the war, fhall be attached, but without injury to their bodies or goods, till it be known to us or to our chief-juffice, how our merchants are entreated which are found in E e 2

ponc ceront trobe en la terre qui contre nos guerroie, & se li noltre sunt sucke sauf, cesent si loz sauf en la nostre terre.

XLVI. Leile chacun des ci en adant éillic de nostre regne & repasirer saus & seur par terre & par eue saude nostre sei, sozs el tens de guerre par alcun petit tens pour pieu del regne : Hais di co sunt jet te sozs li emprisone, & li utlagie solon la les del regne, & la gent ki contre nos guerrose. Des marcheans seit seit, si come nous adons dedant dit.

XLVII. Se aucuns tient daucune eschaette fi come del honoz de Walingesozd, Notingehan, Boloigne, Lancastre, u dautres echaetes qui sunt en nostre main, & sunt de haronie, & il muert, ses heirs ne doinst altre relief, ne sace a nos altre servise, qui feist al baron, ce cele baronie sust en main del baron, & nos la tendzone en tele manieze que le baron la tint.

XLVIII. Li home qui maignent fozs dela fozeff, ne viegnent de ci en avant devant nos

our enemies' country; and if our's be fafe there, they fhall be fafe in our land.

It fhall be lawful for all men in time to come, to go out of our kingdom, and to return fafely and fecurely by land and by water, faving their faith due to us, except it be in time of war for fome fhort time for the profit of the realm. But out of this article are excepted perfons in prifon, perfons out-lawed, according to the law of the land, and perfons of the country with whom we are at war. Concerning merchants what is abovefaid fhall hold as to them.

IF any hold of any efcheat, as of the honour of Wallingford, Nottingham, Boloin, Lancaster, or of other efcheats which are in our hand, and are baronies, and die, his heirs shall owe to us no other relief, nor do us any other fervice, than was due to the baron of such barony when it was in his hand; and we will hold the same in like manner as the baron held it.

MEN that dwell out of the foreft, shall not appear before our justices of the forest by common

nos justiles de la sozest par communes somonces, si ne sont en plait u plege de aucun ou d'aucuns qui seient atachie pour la sozest.

XLIX. Nos ne fezons viscontes, justiles, ne bailliz, fozs de tels qui sachent la les de la terre, e la voillent vien garder.

L. Tuit cil qui fonderent abbeies, dont il ont charges des Reis d'Engleterre, o anciene tenue, aiant en la garde quant eles seront voides, si com il avoit devent.

LI. Totes les forez qui sunt aforesses en nostre tens seient maintenant delasoresses, E ensement seit seit des rivieres qui en nostre tens sunt par nos miles en desens.

LII. Totes les males costumes des sozez & des warrenes, & des sozestiers, & des warrenniers, des vilcontes & de loz ministres, des ribleres & de loz gardes, seient maintenant enquises en chascun conts par vii. chebaliers jurez de meimes le conte, qui dehent estre cseu par prodes homes de meismes le conte & de denz rl. jozz apres co quil aurant sette lenqueste, seient del tot en tot ostees

MAGNA CHARTA. 21g

mon fummons, unless they be in fuit themselves, or bail for others who are attached for the forest.

WE will not make fheriffs, justices, nor bailiffs, but of fuch as know the law of the land, and will keep it.

ALL that have founded abbies, whereof they have charters from the Kings of England, or antient tenure, shall have the custody thereof whilf they are vacant, as they ought to have.

ALL the forefts that have been afforested in our time, shall instantly be disafforested; in like manner be it of rivers, that in our time and by us have been put in defence.

ALL evil cuftoms of forefts and warrens, and of forefters and warreners, of fheriffs and their minifters, of rivers and of guarding them, fhall forthwith be inquired of in every county by twelve knights fworn of the fame county, who must be chosen by the good men of the fame county. And within forty days after they have made fuch inquifition, the faid evil cuftoms fhall be utterly abolished by those fame knights, fo as never

offees par cels mellmes, si que jamais ne faient rapelees, eist ne poz quant que nos le fachons abanto nostre justise, se nos ne sumes en Engleterre.

LIII. Mos tendzons maintenant toz les hostages e totes les chartres, qui nos furent librees des Engleis en seurte de pais, o de ftel servile.

LIV. Hous offeron de tot en tot des baillies les parens Girard d'Aties, si que des ci en abant n'auront nulle basilie en Engleterre, & Engelart de Cigoigni, Peron, Ouion, Andreu, de Chanccas, Gion de Cigoigni, Gistai de Dartigni & ses freres, Phelippe, Darc & ses freres, Sestai son ne= do, & tote loz siute, & maintenant empres le reformement de la pais osferons de nosse regne tos les estranges chevaliers, aubelastiers, serjans, solviers quo chevals & o armes vindrent al nuisement del regne.

LV. Se alcuns est destailiz o esloiniez par nos, sens real * jugement de ses pers, de

* Leal, ut infra.

terres,

never to be revived; provided they be first made known to us, or to our chief justice if we be out of the realm.

Wz will, forthwith, reftore all the hoftages, and all the deeds which have been delivered to us by the English, for furety of the peace, or of faithful fervice.

WE will wholly put out of bailiffwicks, the kindted of Gerard de Aties, fo that from henceforth they shall not have a bailiffwick in England; and Engeland de Cigoigni, Peron, Guyon, Andrew de Chanceas, Gyon de Cygoigni, Geffry de Martigni and his brothers, Philip, Mark and his brothers, Geffry his nephew, and all their train. And prefently after the peace shall be performed, we will put out of the realm all knights, foreigners, slingers, serjeants and foldiers, who came with horse or arms to the nuifance of the realm.

It any be diffeized or effoined by us, without lawful judgment of his peers, of lands, chattels, F f franchifes,

terres, de chassels, de franchiles, o de sa diettrure maintenant si rendions, e le plaiz en commencera di co, adonc en seit fait par jugement des rrb. barons, dont len parole de soz en la seurt de sa país.

LVI. De totes iteles choses dont alcuns fu deffailis o elloianies sens leal jugement de ses pers par le Rei benri noffre pere, o var le Rei Richart nostre frere, que abons en nostre main. o altre tienent cui il nos coment garantir, aurons respit jusqu'a commun terme des croizier. fozs que celes choles dont plais fu comencies a enqueste faite par noffre comandement debant que nos puffions la croiz. Et se nos repairons del velerinage o par abanture remanons del pelerinage maintenant en frons pleine dreiture. Cell meimes respit aurons et en celle maniere de dzeiture faire des fozes desafozester. o que remaignent fozes que li Reis Denri nostre vere, o li Reis Richart nostre frere afozesterent, & des gardes des terres auf funt daltrui fie; que nos avons eues jusques icy par achaison de sie que alcuns tenest de nos par servile de chevalier, & des abbeies quí furent fondees en altruí fie que el nostre. esquels

franchifes, or of any right, we will, forthwith, reftore the fame; and if any difference a rife upon it, it shall be determined by the judgment of the five and twenty barons, of whom mention is made hereafter in the fecurity for the peace.

As to all things whereof any have been diffeized. or effoined without lawful judgment of their peers, by King HENRY our father, or by King RICHARD our brother, which we have in our hands, or which any other has, to whom we are bound to warrant the fame, we will have refpite to the common term of them that are croffed for the holy land, except fuch things for which fuits are commenced, or inquest taken by our order before we took upon us the cross. And if we return from the pilgrimage, or perhaps forbear going, we will do full right therein. The fame respite we will have, and the same right we will do in manner aforefaid, as to the difafforefting of forests, or letting them remain forests, which the Kings, HENRY our father, or RICHARD our brother have afforested; and as to the custodies of lands which are of the fee of other perfons, which we have held till now by reafon of other men's fees, who held of us by knight-fervice; and of abbies that are founded in other men's Ff 2 fees.

elquels li fires del fie dit quila droiture, a quant vos leron repairie de nostre pelerinage, a le no remanons, nos enfrons maintenant pleine droiture a cels qui sen plaindront.

LVII. Puls ne soit pris ne emprisanez pour spel de seme de la mort daltruí, que de sun marcí.

LVIII. Tots les fins & toz les amerciemens qui font feit vers nas a toxt & contre la lei de la terre, faient tat pardone, a len en face par jugement del reb. barans dont len parole de foz, a par le ingement de la greignoz partie de cels enfemble, a le devant dit arcevelque Stefne de Cantozhe fil i puet effre: & cels quil bodza apeler od fei, & fil ni poza effre neien meins ne boiff li afaires abant fenz lui en tel maniere que fe alcuns o alcun des devant diz rev. barons, feront en tel querele feient offe de cell jugement, e altre effeu & jure feient mis a co faire en lieu de cels par le cemanant des devant diz reb. barons.

LIX. Se

fees, in which the lords of the fees claim a right. and when we fhall be returned from our pilgrimage, or if we forbear going, we will immediately do full right to all that fhall complain.

None shall be taken nor imprisoned upon the appeal of a woman, for the death of any other than her husband.

ALL the fines and all the amercements that are imposed for our use, wrongfully and contrary to the law of the land, shall be pardoned; or elfe they shall be determined by the judgment of the five and twenty barons, of whom hereafter, or by the judgment of the greater number of them that shall be present, or before STEPHEN, archbishop of Canterbury, if he can be there, and those that he shall call to him : and if he cannot be prefent, matters shall proceed, notwithstanding, without him; fo always, that if one or more of the faid five and twenty barons be concerned in any fuch complaint, they shall not give judgment thereupon, but others chosen and fworn thall be put in their room to act in their flead, by the relidue of the faid five and twenty harons,

Ŀ

LIX. Se nos abons defailis & choignies les Malais de terre & de franchiles, o daltres choles lens leal jugement de las pers en Engleterre, o en Malales, maintenant los leient rendues, & le plais en sera comancies selos en seit seit en la Darche par jugement de los peres des tenemens d'Engleterre solonc la lei d'Engleterre, des tençmens de Males solonc la les de Males, des tenemens de la Darche solonc de lei de la Darche, & ce meilmes facent li Malais a nos & as nos.

LX. De totes celes choles dont alcuns des Malair fu deflais, o esoignie sens leal jugement de ses pers par le Rei Penri nostre pere, o par le Rei Richart nostre frere, que nos abons en nostre main, o altre tienent cui si nos covient garantir, aurons respit jusqual commun terme des croistez, fozs de celes choses dont plais su commenciez o enqueste faite par nostre commandement debant que nous prissons la croiz, e quant nos serons repairiez o se par abenture remanons de nostre pelerinage maintenant loz enfrons pleine dzeiture solonc les lez de Males, e les debant dites parties.

LXI. Dog

IF we have diffeized or efloined any Welchmen of land, franchifes, or of other things, with. out lawful judgment of their peers, in England or in Wales, they fhall, forthwith, be reftored unto them; and if fuits arife thereupon, right fhall be done them in the Marches by the judgment of their peers; of Englifh tenements according to the law of England, and of tenements in Wales according to the law of Wales; and tenements in the Marches according to the law of the Marches : and in like manner fhall the Welch do to us and our fubjects.

As for all fuch things, whereof any Welchmen have been diffeized or efloined, without lawful judgment of their peers, by King HENRY our father, or by King RICHARD our brother, which we have in our hands, or which any others have. to whom we are bound to warrant the fame, we will have refpite till the common term be expired of all that croffed themselves for the Holy Land. those things excepted whereupon fuits were commenced, or inquests taken by our order before we took upon us the crofs; and when we shall return from our pilgrimage, or if, peradventure, we forbear going, we will prefently caufe full right to be done therein, according to the laws of Wales, and before the faid parties. WE

222

LXI. Mos rendrons le fil Lewelin maintenant & toz les hostages de Colales, & les chartres que l'en nos libza en seurte de país.

LXII. Mos ferons a Alilandze le Rei d'Elcoce de les letozs & de les hollages rendze, « de les franchiles, « de la dzerture folonc la fozme que nos frons a nos altres barons d'Engleterre, le altrement ne deit estre par les chartres que nos avons de lon pere Alillaume, qui su jadis Reis d'Elcoce, « co sera fait par jugement de ses pers en nostre cozt.

LXIII. Cotes ces costumes devant dites e les franchsles que nos avons otrices a tenir en nosire regne quant a nos apartient envers les nos, tuit cil de nosire regne, e clerc e las devent garder quant a eus apartient envers les lo2.

LIV. Et car nos abons otrices totes les choles debant dites por Deu, & por amandement de nostre regue, & por miels plaiser la descorde qui es comanciee entre nos & nos barons: nos voelliant que ces choles seent fermes & estables a tas pors, faisons & otrions

WE will forthwith reftore the fon of LEWELYN, and all the hoftages of Wales, and the deeds that have been delivered to us for focurity of the peace.

WE will deal with ALEXANDER, King of Scotland, as to the reftoring him his fuitors and his hoftages, his franchifes and rights, as we do with our other barons of England, unless it ought to be otherwise by virtue of the charters which we have of his father WILLIAM, late King of Scotland; and this to be by the judgment of his peers in our court.

ALL these customs and franchises aforesaid, which we have granted to be kept in our kingdom, so far forth as we are concerned, towards our men, all perfons of the kingdom, clerks and lay, must observe for their parts towards their men.

AND, whereas, we have granted all these things for Gop's fake, and for the amendment of our government, and for the better compromising the discord arisen betwixt us and our barons: we, willing that the fame be firmly held and established for ever, do make and grant to our barons the Gg fecurity

e otríons a nos barons la seurte de soz el crite; co est que li baron estilent rrb. barons del reane tels quil vodzont, qui dient de tot loz poer garder & tenir. & faire garder la vais a les franchiles que nos abons otriees æ confermees var ceste noffre væsente chartre eilli co est a saver que se nos, o nostre sussile, o nostre bailli, o acuns de nos minifires mesfailons en alcune choles vers alcun, o trespassions en alcun point de la pais, o de la seurte, a nostre messais sera moltrez a quatre barons del devant dit rrb. cil quatre baron viegnent a nos. o a nostre justife, se nos fumes fors del regne, & nos monstrent nostre trespassement, & requierent que nos faciens amender cel trespassement sens prolognement & se nos namendions le trespassement, o se nous sumes fozs del reane nostre justile ne lamendra debant rl. joys empres co que il sera mostre a nos. o a nostre justile se nous sumes fors de la terre. adonc li devant dit quatre revoztent cele caule al altres de cels rrv. barons, & donc cil rrb. barons a la commune de tote Enaleterre nos destreindzont & areveront en totes li manieres que il pozzont. Co est par pzendze chastels & terres & possessions, & en aueles

fecurity underwritten; to wit, That the barons shall chuse five and twenty barons of the Realm. whom they lift, who fhall, to their utmost power. keep and hold, and caufe to be kept, the peace and liberties which we have granted and confirmed by this our prefent charter; infomuch, that if we, or our justice, or our bailiff, or any of our ministers, act contrary to the same in any thing, against any perfons, or offend against any article of this peace and fecurity, and fuch our miscarriage be fhewn to four barons of the faid five and twenty, those four barons shall come to us, or to our justice, if we be out of the realm, and fhew us our miscarriage, and require us to amend the fame without delay; and if we do not amend it, or if we be out of the realm, our justice do . not amend it within forty days after the fame is fhewn to us, or to our justice if we be out of the realm, then the faid four barons shall report the fame to the refidue of the faid five and twenty barons; and then these five and twenty barons, with the commonalty of England, may distress us by all the ways they can; to wit, by seizing on our caftles, lands, and possessions, and by what other means they can, till it be amended, as they shall adjudge; saving our own person, the person of our Queen, and the persons of our children: and when it is amended, they shall be

227.

nucles altres manieres quil parant, jufauil foit muende folonc las sustement, fause mal= tre personne a de notice Reine, a de nas enfans. a quant d fora amande flattendiont a nov. effi come devant. Et qui boara de la terre just que a tates les debant dites choles acclivit, il obsira ai camandement Des vebant dis erb. barons. « auf nous avewern ensemble vels a fon voer, a naus danons comunement & franchement courie he incer a chalcun auf lucer voltes. & is ne le defendrons a meis un. E tos cels de la cetre sui de for son are voldront inner as rev. harens, de destreindse a de areder nos, uns les frons inver oels par notice comundement. fi com vebant elt dit.

LXV. Et le alcuns des rrb. barons mozra, o partira de la terre, o fera descubez en aucune maniere quil ne puill les choles qui lunt debant dites poursibir, cH qui seront remes des debant dit rrb. barons, efficent un altre en lieu de celui folonc loz elgart, que jurera en tel maniere com li altre snt fait.

LXVI. Et en totes les choses que li rrb. barons devent poursivir se paraventure cil rrb.

be subject to us as before. And whoever of the realms will, may fwear, that for the performance of these things he will obey the commands of the faid five and twenty barons, and that, together with them, he will distress us to his power ; and we will give public and free leave to fwear to all that will fwear, and will never hinder any one: and for all perfons of the realm, that of their own accord will fwear to the faid five and twenty barons to diffrefs us, we will iffue our precept, commanding them to fwear as aforefaid.

AND if any of the faid five and twenty barons die, or go out of the realm, or be any way hindred from acting as aforefaid, the refidue of the faid five and twenty barons thall chufe another in his room, according to their differention, who fhat fwear as the others do.

AND as to all things which the faid five and twenty barons are to do, if, peradventure, they be

210

rrb. feront prefent, & descorderont entre els d'aucune chose, o aucun de cels qui se= ront somons ne bodront, o ne pouront estre present, seit ferm & certain co que la griegnor partie de cels qui seront present porderra, o recebra ensemen com se tuit i adeient consenti.

LXVII. Et li debant dit rrb. barons juerent que totes les choses qui sunt debant dites, quil garderont feelement, & feront garder de tot loz poer.

LXVIII. Et nos ne porchacerons dalcun par nos, ne par altruí rien pour quei alcuns de ces otriemenz o de cestes franchiles seit rapelez o amenusiez, & se alcune tel chose sera pourchacie seit casse, & veine, & ja nen userons par nos ne par altruí.

LXIX. Et totes males volentes, des deigz, rancozs, qui sont nees entre nos e nos homes clers e lais, deske la descozde, comanca, avons plainement relaisses e pardonees a toz, e estre co toz les trespassemens qui sunt fait par achaison di ceste descozde des la Pasche en la sezain de nostre regne jusqual resozmement de la país, avom plainement

be not all prefent, or cannot agree, or in cafe any of those that are fummoned cannot or will nor come, whatever shall be determined by the greater number of them that are prefent, shall be good and valid, as if all had been prefent.

AND the faid five and twenty barons fhall fwear, that they will faithfully observe all the matters aforefaid, and cause them to be observed to their power.

AND we will not obtain of any one for ourfelves, or for any other, any thing whereby any of these concessions, or of these liberties may be revoked or annihilated; and if any such thing be obtained, it shall be null and void, nor shall ever be made use of by ourselves or any other.

AND all ill-will, difdain, and rancour, which has been between us and our fubjects of the clergy and laity fince the faid difcord began, we do fully releafe and pardon to them all. And moreover, all trefpaffes that have been committed by occasion of the faid difcord fince Easter, in the fixteenth of our reign, to the restoring of the peace, we have fully released to all clerks and laymen; and

nlainement relaisse a toz clers, et a lais et quant a nos aportient lor abon plainement nardone et otrie di co loz abon fait faire lettres de telmsin overtes de leisnoz Stefne Parcevelle de Cantobire, de feignoz Denri l'arceveske de Diveline, et des devant diz eveloues, et de maistre Pandolf soz ceste seurte et ces otresemenz, poz la que chose nos volons et comandons fermement que realife d'Analeterre soit franche, et que li home en moltre reane alent et tleanent totes les devant dites franchiles, et les deitures, et les otreiemens bien et en pais franchement et quittement, plainement et entierement a els. et loz eirs en totes choses, et en tos leus, a tozio23 fi com devant est dit. Et si fu mre de nostre part, et de la part des ba= rons que totes choles qui defus funt elcrites. feront aardees a bone fei sans malenain. Telmoig en sont cil qui sunt devant dit, et mult altre.

LXX. Ceffe chartre fu donee el pze est appelez Roveninkmede entre Alindesozes et Stanes, le quinzain joz de juig l'an de nostre regne dis et sept ans.

I P A B

and to far as in us lies we have fully pardoned them: And further. we have caused letters patent to be made to them in testimony hereof, witneffed by STEPHEN, archbishop of Canterbury, HEN-Ry, archbiftop of Dublin, and by the aforefaid bifhops, and by Mr. PANDULPHUS, upon this fecurity and these conceffions. Whereby, we will and firicity command, that the church of England be free, and onjoy all the faid liberties, and rights, and grants, well and in peace, freely and quietly fully and entirely to them and their heirs, in all things, in all places, and for ever as aforefaid. And we and our barons have fworn that all things above written, shall be kept on our parts, in good faith, without ill defign. The witneffes are the perfons above-named and many others.

This charter was given at the meadow called Running-Mead, betwixt Windfor and Stanes, the fifteenth day of June, in the seventeenth year of our reign.

Hh JOHN,

I D A M var la arace de Deu Reis d'En= gleterre as visconte de Suthantesire, et a dosce esseuz en tel conte a enquerre et offer les malveiles collumes des vilcontes et de loz ministres des fozes et des fozestiers, et des warennes, et des warrenniers, et des riviers, et de loz aardes, saluz. Das vas mandons que lenz delai saisez en nostre main les terres, et les tenemenz, et les chatels de toz celz del conte de Suthantesire auí ne vod2ont incer as rrv. barons folone la forme auf est escritte en nostre chartre des franchiles, o a cels quil auront a co atomes: æ s'il ne volent jurer maintenant empres quince jozz acompliz, pullque loz terres æ loz tenemen, & loz chatel seront seisi en nostre main : faites vendze toz loz chatelz, & les deniers qui en seront pris gardes saubement, a metre en laie de la fainte terre de Jerusalem; & loz terres & loz tenemens tenes en noffre main jusquil afent jure, & co fu pourvieu par le jugement l'arceveske Stefne de Cantozbire & des barons de nostre regne. Et en telmoig de celle chole nos enveons ceffes nos lettres overtes. Tel= moia mei meisme. A Ddibaam le vint e septain joz de Juig, lan de nostre regne dis æ leptaín.

IOHN, by the grace of GOD, King of England, to the fheriff of Hampshire, and to the twelve that are chosen in that county, to enquire of, and put away, the evil cuftoms of the fheriffs, and of their ministers, of forests and foresters, of warrens and warrenners, of rivers, and of guarding them, greeting. We command you. that without delay, you feize into our hand, the lands and tenements, and the goods of all those of the county of Southampton, that will not fwear to the faid five and twenty barons, according to the form expressed in our charter of liberties, or to fuch as they shall have thereunto appointed; and if they will not fwear prefently, at the end of fifteen days after their lands, and tenements, and chattels are feized into our hands, that ye fell all their goods, and keep fafely the money that ye shall receive for the same, to be employed for the relief of the holy land of Jerufalem; and that we keep their lands and tenements in our hands till they have fworn, or that STEPHEN, archbishop of Canterbury, and the barons of our kingdom have given judgment thereupon. In witness whereof, we direct unto you these our letters patent. Witness ourself: at Odibaam, the feven and twentieth day of June, in the feventeenth year of our reign,



ESSAY

AN

0 N

PARLIAMENTS.

CHAP. I.

Shewing that the frequent meeting of parliaments is the basis of our conflicution, and the true of the government; and that the intermission of them is inconfistent with the body of the English law.

F a man would have an entire view of the English constitution, he must have recourse to those able and approved authors who have written purposely on that subject. For it is a rule, Parva aft authoritas aliud agentis; and what is faid by the by, is of less weight, than what is professedly handled; provided it have been maturely turely confidered, by a competent judge of that matter which he treats. And in this kind we do not find a man better qualified than the learned lord chancellor FORTESCUE, who was an aged lawyer, and had been lord chief justice of England when he wrote his book "De laudibus Legune Anglia, which was on purpose in a dialogue with the prince of Wales, to inform him of the nature of the English constitution, and to let him know by what fort of laws the realm, in which he was to fucceed his father, was to be governed. And therefore he adjures him over and over again to addict himfelf to the understanding of the laws of his father's realm, wherein he was to fucceed; and having shewn the prince the different nature of realms, where a King could tyrannize, and where he could not, being reftrained by politic laws. Rejoice therefore, fays he, most excellent prince ! and be glad, That the law of the realm, in which you are fucceed, is fuch. for it shall exhibit and minister to you and your people no fmall fecurity and comfort.

But out of that excellent book which I believe no way warped, (for then it must lean towards the court, partly because of the flattery and officiousness, which are too often found in dialogues with

PARLIAMENT'S. 239

with princes, and partly because the author was retained on the crown-fide by the greatest office in England) I will confine myself to those passages only which relate to the frequency of parliaments. And the first I meet with is in his 18th chap. concerning the statutes of England *.

" AND if these statutes fall short of their intended efficacy, though devised with such great folemnity and wisdom of parliament; they may very quickly be reformed, but not without the assent of the commons and peers of the realm, which was their source from the beginning."

Now I only defire that the word Concito may be taken notice of, which is the quickeft word that can be imagined, and fhews that our parliaments were always at hand; and the whole paffage fhews for what wife and just reasons they were fo.

* Et si statuta hæc, tanta solemnitate & prudentia edita, efficaciæ tantæ, quantæ conditorum cupiebat intentio, non esse contingant: concito reformari ipsa possunt, at non sine communitatis & procerum regni illius assensu, quali ipsa primitus emanarunt.

Тнб

SAO AN ESSAY ON

THE next paffage is chap. xliii. fol. 120. a #. " Neither do the laws of England allow in law-" hims. frivolous and fruitless delays. And if in " this kingdom, delays in pleas, which are not " to the purpole, flould be used, they may, in " every parliament, be cut off. Yea, and all " other laws used in the realm, when they balt " or are defective in any point, they may, in severy parliament, be fet to rights. Where-" upon it may be rightly concluded, that the " laws of England are the best in the world, " either actually or potentially, fince they can " eafily be brought into act or being. To the " performance whereof, as often as equity to re-" quires, every King is bound by an oath folemn-" ly taken at the time of receiving his crown."

* Neque leges Angliae frivolas & infruttuofas permittunt inducias. Et fiquae in regno illo dilationes in placitis minus accommodae fuerint ufitatae, in omni parliamento amputari illae possime et am & omnes leges aliae in regno illo ufitatae, cum in aliquo claudicaverint, in omni parliamento poterunt reformari. Quo rette concludi potest, quod omnea leges regni illius optime sunt in actu vel potentiâ, quo faciliter in attum duci poterunt & in essentiam realem. Ad quod faciendum, quoties aequitas id poposcerit, finguli Reges ibidem facramento estringuntur, folemniter praesito tempore receptionis diadematis fui.

PARLIAMENTS.

OUT of this last passage I will not trouble you with any more observations than these :

FIRST, That parliaments are the remedy against delays in law proceedings; but how, if parliaments themselves should be delayed?

SECONDLY, That if any or all our laws fhould halt, and our parliaments, at the fame time, fhould be crippled too, and not be able to come together; they could not help one another.

In the next and last chapter of that book, fol. 129. b. the prince immediately replies * :

"My lord chancellor, by the tenour of your difcourfe in this dialogue I am thoroughly fatisfied, That the laws of England are not only good, but the beft in the world.

* Princeps. Leges illas, nedum bonas fed & optimas effe cancellarie, ex profecutione tua in hoc dialogo certifime deprehendi. Et fiquae ex illis meliorari depofcant, id citifime fieri posse parliamentorum ibidem formulae nos erudiunt. Quo realiter, potentialiterve, regnum illud femper praestantissis legibus gubernatur. Nec tuas in hac concionatione dostrinas suturis Angliae regious inutiles fore conjicio; dum non delectent regere legibus quae non delectant.

Ιi

" And

241

And in cafe any of the laws want to be mended or improved, the rules of the Englifh parliaments do inftruct us, That that may be done
forthwith. Whereupon, the realm of England is always governed by the very beft laws,
either in reality or in poffibility. And befides,
I conjecture that the doctrines that have been
held forth in this dialogue, will be very ufeful
to the Kings of England that fhall come hereafter; fince no body likes to govern by laws
which they do not like."

AFTER all these lauds and praises of English laws. which the chancellor has fluck all over with stars quite through his book, and has made their perfection to centre in this, that they either are or foon may be, the best in the world; because in cafe they labour under any defect, that fault may be immediately amended by a wife fenate : What if that wife fenate be no where to be found. or is at no certainty? It is then impossible to render the chancellor's Latin into English. For the fpeedy perfection of the English laws, which the prince and he are agreed is concito & citiffime, may be rendered, either at the four year's end, or the twelve year's end, or at the world's end. For fo I am fatisfied it was meant, after a ten

a ten year's interval of parliaments, if the herbwoman at Edinburgh had not thrown her cricketftool at the arch bishop's head. And fo Dr. Hey-LIN, I remember, does not fo much acknowledge that fecret as justify it. It is in his little book of observations upon HAMMOND L'Es-TRANGE's history of the reign of K. CHARLES I. Says HAMMOND, Upon the diffolution of that wife parliament in 1628 (to whom we owe the petition of right) all wife men concluded that there was an end of all parliaments. Yes, fays Hey-LIN. fo they might well, the King having been troubled with their impertinences, and having an example in France before his eyes, where parliaments have been fo much difcontinued, that it is become a proverb amongst them, Voyons le Jeu de Trois Estats, as the strangest fight which can be feen in an age. I have not the book now by me, but I will be answerable for the substance of this quotation, having retained this paffage in my head above thefe five and twenty years.

I CAN only touch feveral other arguments which might be enlarged upon. The high court of parliament is the dernier reffort in this kingdom; and if that fail, there may be a failure of the English juffice,

I i 2

BRACTON

BRACTON fays of an ambiguous or difficult caule, Respectivetur ad magnam curiam; but unless parliaments be frequent, such a cause is adjourned to a long day.

EVERY body that understands the English confitution, knows that it is exactly the fame as it was laid down in parliament 8 EDWARD IV. by the lord chancellor that then was. You have it in Sir ROBERT COTTON's abridgment of the Rolls in the Tower, p. 682. in these words: "He then "declared the three estates to comprehend the "governance of this land, the preheminence "whereof, was to the King as chief, the fecond "to the lords and bishops, and the third to the "commons." Now if we are at a loss or uncertainty about our parliaments, we are at a loss or uncertainty about two thirds of our government.

But I will fay no more upon this head, intending to fhew in the following chapters, how the matter of parliaments flood in former ages.

CHAP.

- - J.

Digitized by GOOGLE

PARLIAMENTS. 245

CHAP. II.

Shewing how Parliaments flood in King ALFRED's time, and afterwards.

I CHUSE to begin with this period of time of K. ALFRED'S reign, because we have clear law and history to shew how parliaments stood in his time, and what law was ordained concerning them for ever.

IT is in the Mirror of Juffice, which, as my lord COKE fays in his preface to his tenth reports, was written in the Saxon times, and it appears by the book itfelf: but feveral things were added to it by a learned and wife lawyer ANDREW HORNE, who lived in the reign of EDWARD I. and ED-WARD II. antiquity enough for a book, we defire no more; for we are fure that no commonwealthfman had the penning of it *.

* The words of the Mirror are these, p. 10. Pur le estate del royalme fist le Roy Alfred assembler les comitees, & ordeigne pur usage perpetuelle, que a deux foits per l'an ou pluis sovent, pur mestier, en tempts de peace se assembleront o Londres pur parliamenter sur le guidement del people de Dieu, comment gents se garderent de peshe, biverent en quiet, & recieverent droit per "For

"For the good eftate of the realm, King AL-"FRED caufed the counties to affemble, and ordained it for a perpetual ufage, that at two times yearly, or oftener if need were, in time of peace, they fhould affemble at London, to fit in parliament, for the guidance of God's people, how the nation fhould keep themfelves from fin, live in quiet, and receive right by certain ufages and holy judgments. By this eftate were made many ordinances by feveral Kings, down to the King that is now; (which, fays the margin, was EDWARD the firft) which ordinances are difufed by fome that are not fo wife, and for want that they are not put into writing and publifhed in certain."

In this paffage the two times a year feem to be flationary; the calling a parliament oftener than two times a year, *if need were*, is plainly intended for contingencies of flate, and when the *ardua regni*, or extraordinary affairs of the nation required an extraordinary parliament. I fay, and will make it out to all the world, by laws and declarations

certaine usages & sainchs judgements. Per celeftate se fierent plusiours ordinances per plusors Royes jesque at ore Roy; Les quells ordinances sont disuses per meins sages, & pur desault que elles ne sont my mise en escript & publies en certeine.

of

PARLIAMENTS

of parliament, that the King has a power of calling parliaments within the law; but I never did, nor ever will fay to the end of my life, that the King can hinder parliaments appointed by law. These frequent parliaments were to meet at London in time of peace. We see then what has interrupted our parliaments both as to time and place. For London was after in the hands of the Dane, and foreigners' wars and tribulations came on.

But the beft way is to let an author explain himfelf; which the Mirror does, in telling us likewife the abufions of the law, or the contrarieties and repugnances to right; or, as he calls it, the fraud and force which is put upon law. This way of writing law is the beft that can be invented; for it is the way of preaching by politive nad-negative, which is a two edged fword, and cuts both ways. And the truth of it is, the negative part of the law, which lies in a little compafs, oftentimes teaches us a world of the politive. For inftance, the 33 articles in the roll, I HENRY IV. m. 20. which K.RICHARD II. folemnly acknowledged of his own maladminiftration, do give us more light into

into the conflicution, than a book of fix times the bignels could do.

But to come to the abufions of law which are in the Mirror, p. 282. he fays, That the first and fovereign abufion, is for the King to be beyond the law, whereas he ought to be fubject to it, as is contained in his oath: though the fecond is my bufines, which is in these words *:

" THE fecond abufion of the law is, that whereas parliaments ought to convene for the falvation of the fouls of trefpaffers, and this at London, and two times in the year, now a-days they meet but feldom, and at the will of the King for aids and gatherings of treafure: and

* Second abusion est, que ou les parlaments se Juissent faire pur le falvation des almes de trespassions, & ceo a Londres & deux foits per an, la ne se font ils forsque rarement, & a la volunt le Roy pur aides & cuilets de tresore. Et ou les ordinances duissent faire al common assent del Roy & de ses counties la le se font ore per le Roy & ses clerkes; & per aliens & autres que nosent contravener le Roy; eins desfrent de my plaire; & de luy counfoller a son prasti, tout me soit my le counsel covenable al commons del people, sans appeller les counties, & sans ensuer le vules de droit, & dount plusores ordinances se foundent ore pluis sur volunt, que sur droit.

whereas

PARLIAMENTS.

" whereas ordinances ought to be made by the " common affent of the King and his coun-" ties, now they are made by the King and " his clerks, and by aliens and others that " dare not contradict the King, but defire to " pleafe him, and to counfel him for his own " profit, though it be not counfel which is con-" venient for the commons of the people; " without applying to the counties, and without " following the rules of right: whereupon there " are feveral of the prefent ordinances that are " rather founded upon will, that upon right."

FROM this paffage I shall only observe, that the place of a parliament's meeting is fixed, and still at London; and that the two times a year was standing law down to K. EDWARD I. though abusions and court-practices had broken in upon the law.

Now let us fee how the law ftood afterwards; wherein I can only confult the books I have by me, for I have not health enough to go and transcribe the records in the Tower, but take them upon content as they lie in Sir ROBERT COTTON'S abridgement of the records in the Tower. And, there in the very first page, 5 ED-K k WARD

249

WARD II. it is ordained, Que parliament ferra temus un ou deux foits per an. That a Parliament shall be held one time or two times a year. Here you see the twice a year is dwindled into once or swice.

THE next is p. 93. of the fame book, 36 ED-WARD III. " The print touching the yearly " holding of a parliament, cap. X. agreeth with " the record." Now the print is, " Item, For " maintenance of the faid articles and flatutes, " and redrefs of divers mifchiefs which daily hap-" pen, a parliament fhall be holden every year, " as another time was ordained by flatute."

Now that statute, as I find by the statute-book, for I cannot find it in Sir ROBERT COTTON, is thus, 4 EDWARD III. cap. 14. " Item, It is accord-" ed, that a parliament shall be holden every your " once, and more often if need be."

By the reason given in 36 EDWARD III. cap. X. just now recited, for a yearly parliament, one would think it should be a daily parliament; because it is for the maintenance of former statutes, and redress of divers mischiefs which daily happen: but I believe that a parliament which sits but

PARLIAMENTS

but forty days in the year are able to do that work; concerning which we will inquire further afterwards.

IN 50 EDWARD III. p. 138. The parliament's demand or petition is this, "That a par-"liament may be holden every year; the knights "of the parliament may be chosen by the whole "counties; and that the sheriff may likewise be "without brokage in court."

THE King's anfwer is this, " To the parlia-" ment, there are flatutes made therefore; to the " fheriffs there is anfwer made; to the knightsit " is agreed, that they fhall be chosen by common " confent of every county."

AFTER these three laws in the time of EDWARD III. we come to the first of King RICHARD the second, p. 163. where the petition or demand for a yearly parliament is this: "That a parliament "may be yearly holden in convenient place, to "redress delays in fuits, and to end such cases as "the judges doubt of,"

THE King's anfwer is: " It shall be as it hath " been used."

Kk 2

Ia

251:

IN 2 RICHARD II. p. 173. by the King's commandment one caufe of opening the parliament is declared to be this: "Secondly, for that it was "enacted that a parliament fhould yearly be hold. "en."

NAY, if the court infift upon a yearly parliament, the country may and ought.

THUS stood the law of England till 16 CARO-LI I. when that King having difcontinued parliaments for twelve years and created a distrust of him in the breafts of his people, which was just; (for if a prince fpoil the government for twelve years together, who fhall truft him in the thirteenth?) the nation found a neceffity of having a cautionary parliament every third year, to fecure their annual parliaments for the two years immediately foregoing. This is the true reason of the act for a triennial parliament, which was a perfect innovation both name and thing. For I challenge any antiquary, lawyer, or perfon whatfoever that has turned over books, to fhew me the word triennial joined to the word parliament, from the foundation of this government till the year 1640. triennial parliament therefore is fo far from being the the conftitution of this government, that if it were fo, the conftitution is not fo antient as has been fuppofed, but first drew its breath under CHARLES I. But as I faid before, that act was only a cautionary act, as a town or gate of a city is taken in caution, for performance of articles. This appears by the first thing which is enacted in that law, namely, That the laws for a parliament to be bolden at least once a year, shall bereaster be duly kept and observed. Scobel's collect. 16 Car. I. cap. i.

THIS act was gently drawn up, and had more of a profpect than a retrofpect, and does not look back into those oppressions which King CHARLES himself in his large declaration of August the 12th does acknowledge were insupportable; which were wholly owing to this long intermission of parliaments: but it wisely provides, that in case the two first years parliaments should fail, then came a peremptory parliament, which the King and keeper might call if they pleased; but if they did not, the counties and boroughs of England were forced to fend,

AFTER this comes the act 16 CAR. II. cap. i. and repeals this triennial act, because they fay, It " It is in derogation of his majefty's just rights and prerogative, inherent to the imperial crown of this realm, for the calling and affembling of parliaments;" whereupon the triennial act is ansulled as if it had never been made.

I WISH it had never been made: but we will flop there first. It is annulled as if it had never been made. There is nothing loss by that; for then our parliaments are where they were, which was due annual.

WELL, now let us fee what alteration is made by this new act, 16 CAR. II. which follows in thefe words, fect. 3. "And becaufe by the an-" tient laws and flatutes of this realm, made in " the reign of King EDWARD III*, parliaments " are to be held very often (that is, one or twice " a year) therefore they fhall not be difcontinued " above three years at the moft." I do not ufe to admire confequences which I do not underfland. But, under favour, I would be taken right. I fay, that the recital of the antient laws of this realm does not repeal them, difannul them, *anneantir*,

* 4 Edward III. cop. XIV. 36 Edward III. cop. X. any

PARLIAMENTS. 255

any thing, nothing; when there is not one repealing word concerning them in that flatute.

I KNEW what I faid when I wifhed the triennial bill of 1640 had never been made; and it muft be remembered that that act is as if it had never been made; for it gave occafion to fome men that came in with the deluge of the reftoration, when it rained cavaliers (though I value all mens rights more than my own, and princes moft becaufe they are biggeft) and it prompted them to think of turning a cautionary triennial, into a difcretionary. But, God be thanked ! they wanted words to express themfelves; and if they meant it, they have not done it.

But fo as they did put the act together, and as it now ftands, there are feveral things in it worth obferving. 1ft. That if there be occasion there shall be more and oftener parliaments than once in three years. Now I ask for whole fake was that clause enacted? Not for the King's, for he was always enabled by his prerogative, for the fake of the ardua regni, to call a parliament every month in the year. Well then, it was for the fake of his people, that if they judged there was occasion for more

more or oftener parliaments, they might afk for them. For I appeal to common fenfe, whether it be not ridiculous, and wonderfully beneath the dignity of a parliament, when a prince was bound by his coronation-oath to call a parliament once a year, or oftener if need were (for fo the law ftood, and fo this prince was at that time bound) to interpret a law after fuch a manner, as to fay he was enabled to call a parliament oftener than once in three years.

So much for that point; the next is this. The upfhot of this act of parliament, and the conclufiof the whole act is in thefe words: "To the end "there may be a frequent calling, affembling, "and holding of parliaments once in three years "at the leaft." I do fay, that if ever we came to low-water mark in our laws about parliaments, and if ever they run dregs, it was in the time of King CHARLES II. And yet it was enacted, and was the end of that law, that one fhould be called once in three years at the leaft. Now I leave it to the lawyers to tell, whether a proclamation can call a parliament, or any thing elfe befides a writ of fummons and a writ for elections.

AND

AND thus have I run through the law of parliaments till the other day, and confidered what is the law at prefent. From K. ALFRED's time down to EDWARD I. it feems to have been the flanding law to have parliaments twice a year. I know that the invafions of feveral nations, both Danes and Normans, and the revolutions and diffurbalces of state which happen, must needs cause frequent interruptions in the practice of it. But my reason to be of that opinion is this, because HORNE. who lived in those times, fays that parliaments at that time ought to meet twice a year, and that at London; and that the intermitting of parliaments was the greatest abusion of the law but one: though I think I have still a greater authority than HORNE's (if any thing in this world can be bigger than that of an able and an honeft man) but it is a King, in his letter to the pope; it is in the claufe rolls anno 3 EDWARD L. m. 9. scedula, and is to be feen in PRYNN's large book, p. 158. I will quote no more of it than is for 'my purpole; it is concerning the yearly tribute of a thoufand marks. which the popes from K. JOHN's time claimed, and there were feveral years due. The pope's nuncio follicits the matter, but the King excufes himfelf that he had come to no refolution in his Easter parliament, but by common advice he **I**. 1 would

would give him an answer in his Michaelmas parliament next following. At prefent I only mind the wording and way of expressing these two parliaments. Concerning the first he fays. In parliamento quod circa octabas resurrectionis Dominica celebrari in Anglia consuevit: " In a parliament that • used to be held in England about the octaves of " Easter." That word confuevit amounts to cuftom and usage, and seems to express a parliament de more. He fays, that the parliament was in octabis, and by occasion of his fickness (after they had made feveral good laws, and redreffed many grievances, but not all that lay before them) for the reason aforefaid, that parliament was diffolved, and the King could not treat with them about the pope's petition of tribute. But he promifes to do the pope reason in his Michaelmas parliament which he intended *.

* Now let us see how that is expressed; Pro firmo scituri, pie pater & domine, quod in alio parliamento nostro quod ad sestum santti Michaelis prox. sutur. intendimus, dante Domino, celebrare, habito & communicato constitio cum prelatis proceribus memoratis, vobis super praemiss, ipsorum constilia dabimus responsionem.

" KNOW

PARLIAMENTS. 250

"KNOW for certain, pious father and lord, that in another parliament of our's, which we intend to hold at Michaelmas next enfuing, with God's leave; we, and the prelates, and peers aforefaid, confulting together, according to their advice will give you an answer upon the premifes."

Bur I will fay no more upon this head, being intent upon another.

L12 CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Shewing that the yearly parliaments were fresh and fresh.

THERE are feveral ways of proving that there was a new election every year. They tell me, there are writs extant for new elections four-fcore years fucceffively, where there are about fix wanting. What if they had been all loft, embezzled, or made away? What then, is our conftitution loft, when bundles of writs are loft? No. I will go no further than this laft letter, to fhew that there is a great appearance, that while there were two parliaments in a year, the fecond must be new called. Though I hate the word new. applied to a parliament; for a parliament is a parliament, and our anceftors would no more have dreamed of a stale or old parliament, than of an old moon cut out into ftars. I will cite the words of King EDWARD's letter, dated the 19th of June, in the third of his reign; and when that is done, let the reader make his own judgment upon them.

IT was in the interval betwixt his Easter and his Michaelmas parliament. "But before we "could

PARLIAMENTS

" could put an end to that parliament, becaufe " of the multitude of grievances which lay be-" fore them, your nuncio in the mean time, " diligently folliciting your bufinefs, a great di-" ftemper, as it pleafed GoD, befel me, which " hindered the finishing of many other matters, " and treating about the petition of the yearly " tribute, which is a great grief to me: and " fo by reason of my faid illnefs (from which " by the grace of GoD, in whose hands are " the iffues of life and death, I begin to recover) " that parliament was diffolved, and hereupon " I could not treat with the prelates and peers " aforefaid, about this tribute*."

* Set antequam idem parliamento propter negotiorum multitudinem quæ reformationis remedio indigebant finem imponere valeremus, eodem capellano vestro responsionem debitam sibi sieri instanter postulante, quædam gravis nos invasit, sicut Domino placuit, infirmitas corporalis, quae persectionem multorum aliorum negotiorum, & deliberationem petitionis census annui supradicti, de quo dolemus non modicum, impedivit; sicque cum occassione infirmitatis huju/modi, a qua per Dei gratiam cujus est perimere & mederi, incepimus convalescere, idem parliamentum superit dissolutum, & super hoc nequiverimus super petitione census ejustem deliberationem habere cum praelatis & proceribus antedistis.

From

261

262

AN ESSAY ON

FROM this long quotation, I shall only make this observation at present. That in this parliament begun in the octaves of Easter [perhans upon May-day] there was a great deal of bufiness done, and a great deal of bufiness left undone; amongst the rest the pope's, becaufe of the King's fickness, who thereupon could not give answers to bills or petitions; and that the nuncio's petition was unanfwered went to the King's heart. But upon occafion of that fickness it was, that the parliament was diffolved, and the pope's bufinefs hindered. to the King's great regret. What, could not the King keep his parliament alive till the nineteenth of June, when he himfelf began to be well again, which is the date of the letter? It is no more than fifty days from their first fitting down to the date of his letter; and yet, though he fet his heart upon the bufinefs that lay before that parliament, it was diffolved; and to ftop this gap, he promifes to call another Then it feems parliament at Michaelmas. they did not understand the method of prorogations, and it is unknown to me by what law it came in. If there be fuch a law, I never minded it; for I am fpeaking of the conflitution, and not of innovations.

Bur

Bur, I believe the true reason of the abrupt diffolution of that fummer parliament, in conjunction with the King's fickness, was this, That if they had been held till Michaelmas, though there was then to be another parliament, it must have been at the King's charge. For I am of opinion, by what I have feen even as low as RICHARD the fecond's time, that the fitting of a Darliament was usually forty Days : and that the quarantain was not duly kept in this parliament. 3 EDWARD I. of the octaves of Easter. But there was a concern in holding a parliament above forty days about the knights' and burgeffes' wages; as appears by that memorable record which is in KNYGHTON, p. 2682. being the meffage fent by both houses to King RICHARD the fecond at Eltham*.

In fhort, they fay they have an antient statute for it, that in case the King wilfully absent him-

self,

[•] The words are these: Dicunt etiam quod habent ex antique flatuto, quod fi Rex a parliamento suo se alienaverit sua spontes non aliqua infirmitate aut aliqua alia de causa necessitatis, set per immoderatam voluntatem proterve se subtraxerit per absentiam temporis 40 dierum, tanquam de vexatione populi sui S gravibus expensis corum non curans, extunc licitum omnibus Es singulis corum absque domigerio Regis redire ad propria Es unicuique corum in patriam suam remeare.

felf, and will not come to parliament, as having no care of vexing his people, nor regard of their great expences, after forty days they are free to go home, and the King has no wrong done him.

Now what is the meaning of these forty days, but that they had waited a just fession? And how should the parliament-mens' wages be otherwise adjusted, when at the end of every parliament in those times they were difmissed, with defiring them to fue out their writs for their wages? And I leave it to the antiquaries, because I am not now able to travel in that point, to confider how the several proportions of land which are allotted for the knights and burgeffes in several counties for their wages, can be adjusted without a certainty of the length of their sefions.

But not a word of this is my prefent bufinefs, which was to fhew, that parliaments by the confitution are not to be ftale; as in a former reign one was retained about nineteen years with penfions, and another for fewer years, with places and turning out of places: but if a parliament were corrupted neither of these ways, yet a ftanding parliament will always stagnate, and be like a country-pond which is over-grown with ducks

. .

ducks-meat. The worft King, or at leaft, one of them that ever the nation had, was fo limited by the conftitution, that he did not know how to compafs a long parliament, and therefore he was fain to take other indirect ways to gain the fame point as if he had one. It was RICHARD the fecond; who, in the articles alledged againft him, and confeffed by him, lets us know it was by influencing elections and falle returns. The words as they ftand in the rolls, I HENRY IV. m. ZO. are thefe*:

* 19 Item, Licet de flatuto, & confuetudine regni sui in convocatione cujuslibet parliamenti populus suus in fingulis comitatibus regni debeat effe liber ad eligendum & deputandum milites pro hujusmodi comitatibas ad intereffendum parliamento, E ad exponendum corum gravamina, & ad prosequendum pro remediis superinde prout eis wideretur expedire; tamen prefatus Rex ut in parliamentis suis liberius confequi valeat sua tem eraria voluntatis effectum, direxit mandata sua frequentius wicecomitibus fuis, ut certas perfonas per ipfum Regem nomina. tas ut milites comitatuum wenire faciant ad parliamenta jua, quos quidem milites eidem Regi faventes inducere poterat, prout frequentius fecit, quandoque per minas varias, & terrores, & quandoque per munera ad confentiendum illis qua Regno fuerant prejudicialia, & populo quamplurimum onerofa; & specialiter ad concedendum idem Regi subsidium lanarum ad terminum vita sua, & aliud subsidium ad certos annos, suum populum nimium opprimendo.

M m

mand

" 19. Item.

" 19. Item, Although by statute, and the cuf-" tom of his realm in the calling of every par-" liament in every the counties of England, his " people ought to be free to chuse and depute " knights for the faid counties to be prefent in " parliament, and to lay open their grievances, " and to profecute for remedies thereupon as they " think fit; notwithstanding, the faid King, that " in his parliaments he might obtain his will " which was rafh. often directed his mandates " to his fheriffs, that they should return certain " perfons nominated by the King himfelf as " knights of the fhires; which knights indeed " he could make pliable to him, and as he " very often did, fometimes by various threats " and terrors, and fometimes by gifts, to confent " to those things which were prejudicial to the " 'realm, and extremely burdenfome to the peo-" ple; and particularly to grant the fame King " the fubfidy of wool during his life, and another " fubfidy for certain years, thereby too much " oppreffing his people."

Now if he could have made long parliaments, he need not have made use of these mean shifts. But he could make use of no other way, because parliaments, as I faid, were fresh and fresh, and

and antiquity knew no other. And if any man can make out of this authentic record, that it was any otherwife, than fo many parliaments, fo many elections, then I have done with writing and reading.

M m 2

267

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of the kalends of May.

T last I am come to fearch after the head of Nile, and the true old land-mark of the English Constitution. How parliaments stood in the British times I am not certain : but that there were parliaments then I am certain. I have it from the wife GILDAS, that VORTIGERN and his foolifh thaynes fent to the Saxons for help against the Picts and Scots, and took into their bofoms a warlike and fierce nation, whom at a distance they were afraid of. And they indeed of course beat those that infested Severus's wall, but they made mine hofts that invited them in, hewers of wood and drawers of water. And those of the Britons that opposed them, the Saxons drove out of their country, whereby, as GILDAS favs, all their records were loft. But out of that venerable author we plainly fee, that the lamentable letter, which was fent fome few years before to the fenate of Rome, was written by a British parliament. For whose sake I beg of all nations not to let in legions of foreign nations to be their masters; for when they want them and

and their protection most, they shall go without it. For when the Roman legions were withdrawn out of Britain (which caused our enemies to make an infult) and the British parliament begged hard to have them return, the Roman senate's answer was, that they were otherwise engaged; and they must help themselves as they could, which made them betake themselves as they could, which made them betake themselves to the Saxons. A very fair answer to a nation that was disabled and disarmed, after their Kings and parliaments had been only tax-gatherers to the Romans for several hundreds of years; as, if you have no true Lord Mayor, you must still have pageants, and fomewhat that keeps up the show.

BUT after these early times, we have somewhat in King EDWARD the Confession's laws, which all fucceeding Kings have been sworn to, which I will try what to make of. It is a yearly folkmote upon the kalends of May. I do not know readily what that yearly folkmote is, because those laws of EDWARD the Confession fay that King ARTHUR invented it; Quod Arthurus Rex inclytus Britonum invenit. Then I am fure the original name of it was not folkmote. So we will mind the name no more, but come to the thing.

Sir

SIR HENRY SPELMAN, in the most learned gloffary that ever was written, I will not except Mr. SOMNER'S, fays thus under the word Gemotum *; " A wittenagemote was the fame thing amongst the " English Saxons, as now at this day a parlia-" ment is amongst us; and a wittenagemote dif-" fered little from a folkmote, only that this lass " was annual, and chiefly fat about the standing " affairs of the nation." The other was called at the King's pleasure upon emergencies of state, and for the stake of making laws.

Now let us fee what the learned antiquary fays concerning folkmotes by themfelves in the fame place, p. 315. † "In a folkmote once every year

Wittenagemot idem apud Anglofaxones quod apud nos hodie parliamentum, paramque a Folcmoto differebat, nifi quod hoc annuum effet & e certis plerumque caufis, illud ex arduis contingentibus & legum condendarum gratia, ad arbitrium principis indictum.

In Folcmoto somel quotannis sub initio kalendarum Maii (tanquam in annuo parliumento) convenere Regni principes, tam episcopi quam magistratus liberique homines. Jurantur laici omnes coram episcopis in mutuum sædus, in sidelitatem Regis, & in jura regni conservanda. Consulitur de communi satute, de pace, de bello, & de utilitate publica promovenda.

" at the beginning of the kalends of May (as in " a yearly parliament) there met together the " princes of the realm, as well bifhops as magi-" ftrates, and the freemen. All the laymen are " fworn in the prefence of the bifhops into a mu-" tual covenant with one another, into their feal-" ty to the King, and to preferve the rights of the " kingdom. They confult of the common fafety, " of peace, of war, and of promoting the public " profit."

It follows in the next words *, " Befides, a " Folkmote is used in every fudden danger, and " likewise if neceffity require it, under the alder-" man (that is, the earl) of every county."

THIS last is plainly a provincial Folkmote in time of necessity: but the former part of the fentence feems to intimate, that upon a furprize, when the King had not time to call a parliament, the last Folkmote met; as the last Westminster parliament did, to give the prince of Orange the

* Adhibetur praeterea Folcmotum in repentino omni discrimine, exigente etiamnecessitate, sub aldermanno (hoc est, comites) sujustibet comitatus,

administration,

administration, before it was possible to have a parliament elected.

TROUGH the former defeription of the general and not the provincial Folkmote is our prefent bufinels. And at first fight it looks like a full parliament, for it confifts of the princes, as well bifbops as magistrates, and the freemon; that is to fay, the chiefs of the whole nation. And they are employed in parliament work, for they confast of the common safety, of peace, of war, and promoting the sublic profit. And did not the general title of our Paws every feffion run thus; To the high honour of God, and to the profit of the commonwealth? If ever there were wites in parliament, fure they were princes, as well bishops as magistrates, and the Why then does this learned knight freemen. diffinguish betwixt'a Wittenagemote and a Folkmote, feeing they were both made up of wites? I am governed by things and not by words, and am thoroughly fatisfied that an affembly which does parliament bulinefs is a parliament. And no doubt the Folkmote made laws; for it is not to be supposed that an affembly of the whole nation fould fit confulting forty days of peace and war, of armies and fleets (which in those days were three thousand thips, and were able to make out the

272

the dominion of the feas) of the grievances of the nation, and the redrefs of those grievances; and of providing for the common profit of the realm; and after all not be able to enact their own conclusions. That is just as if our present parliament should spend forty days in finding out ways and means for the raising money, and afterwards were not able to put them into a law: or as we private men use to consult, and debate, and settle the nation over a dish of coffee, without being able to oblige one fingle man to obey our orders.

THE thing which milled the great antiquary (as I conjecture) to make this mark of difference betwixt a Folkmote and a Wittenagemote, as if a Wittenagemote made laws, and a Folkmote not. is this; That when the Saxon Kings iffued out their laws, they faid they had paffed in their Wittenagemote, concilio (apientum, or council of wife men: and it was proper for the King to call his Folkmote by that name, though not for them themselves. As for instance, the writs of election at this day call for fome of the difcreeteft to be chosen to parliament, though the members do not affume that title; and I know fo much of the old English genius, that they would no more have called themfelves a Wittenagemote, than Nn this

this prefent parliament would call their votes, which come out day by day, Journal des Scavans.

But I will wave conjectures, even in antiquities, (though we are there oftentimes forced to go in the dark, to tread upon ruins, and to feel out our way;) because I have direct proof that the Folkmote made all the laws we ever had. And for this I will go no further than to the third branch of the usual and accustomed coronationoath, taken by the former Kings of England, and taken twice by RICHARD II*.

" Do you grant that the juft laws and cuftoms, " which are of the Folks chufing, fhall be kept, " and do you promife that they fhall be pro-" tected, and, to the honour of GoD, receive af-" firmance by you, to the utmost of your power? " The King fhall answer, I grant and promife."

* 1 Hen. IV. membr. 20 inter Decem Scriptores, p. 2746. in these words, spoken to the King by way of question. Concedis justas leges & confuetudines effe tenendas; & promittis per te effe protegendas & ad honorem Dei corroborandas quas Fulgus elegerit secundum vires tuas? Respondebit, Concedo & promitto.

Now

Now I would fain know how a Folkmote can be otherwife expressed in Latin than by the word Vulgus, which is a collective word: or how the Vulgus or Folk could chuse laws any otherwise than in a Folkmote?

I wILL not enter into the stiff dispute which exercifed K. CHARLES I. and his parliaments for a long time, whether the word was prater tenfe, or future, and whether the word was best rendered in the French translations, the laws which the Folk auront efleu, shall have chosen, or which the Folk effieront shall hereafter chuse: whereupon they faid, that he was bound to fign and affirm all the laws they fhould hereafter prefent to him, and that he could not make use of a negative without I fay, that that whole difpute was not periury. worth a farthing. For if the Folk chofe the laws all along down to King RICHARD the fecond's time, and the Kings were fworn to affirm them, then we know how the laws antiently were made: and who cares whether effieront, or chufing for the future, be the fense of the word or no? For if the Folks chufing was the conftitution in King RICHARD the fecond's time, then I would fain know in what King's reign it was afterwards, shat the conflictution was altered.

N n 2

÷. .

In

IN short, the Folk chose the laws; and I believe the English Folkmote and Wittenagemote will be found to be old HOMER's river,

Or Earlor xalixor Seoi, Sonto SE Exaptivo legr,

which the gods call Xanthus, but mortal men call Scamander. Now, though Scamander be the homelier name, yet it is the fame river.

I CANNOT but fay there was fome difference betwixt the Folkmote upon the kalends of May, and the Folkmotes which the King always called for his ardua contingentia, or contingencies of state: but the difference lay only in this, that the Folkmote of the kalends of May was a parliament de more, and of course, who affembled themselves, fub initio kalendarum Maii, fays Spelman, and were bound to do fo, in capite kal. Maii, fay the laws of EDWARD the confessor, cap. xxxv. de greve; (and out of that chapter has Sir HENRY SPELMAN extracted his true account of a general Folkmote, which was anniverfary:) whereas, a Wittenagemote or extraordinary parliament or Folkmote was fummoned at the King's pleafure, and was ever at his call both for time and place. Other difference I can find none. For as for the conflituent parts of a Folkmote, if the princes of the realm,

realm. as well bishops as magistrates, and the freemen, cannot denominaté a Wittenagemote. I know not where the King will find his wits. of wife-men. I have fpoken to that point already. I have likewife fooken to the point of the Folkmotes making of laws. We find, indeed, the Saxon Kings in the preface to their laws which were made in extraordinary parliaments, decreeing with their wites. (mid minan picenan) fome at Greatanlage, and at Midwinter, afterwards at Eaxcester, as King ATHELSTAN; some at Lundenbrig, at the holy Easterly tide, as King ED-MUND: others at Wodestock in Mercialand, and others at Winchester. Whereby it appears that the Kings of England had a power to fummon parliaments when and where their weighty affairs required them, in all places of the realm, and at all feafons of the year. This is an undoubted prerogative lodged in the King for the fake of the ardua contingentia; and no man would govern a kingdom that could not command the advice and affiftance of his fubjects to be forth-coming, when the occafions of the kingdom required And for the fake of these ardua negotia, the ìt. knights, citizens, and burgeffes are to be impowered to act in parliament-bufinefs by those that fent them; left, for want of that full and fufficient

277

cient power, or by means of an improvident election, these arduous and weighty affairs of the kingdom should, in any wife, remain infecta, or be left undone. This is contained in the present writ of elections directed to every sheriff of a counby at every election of parliament-men.

But that is not my prefent bufinefs; for I am in a further fearch after the annual, or rather the anniverfary Folkmote.

CHAP:

10000

Digitized by

CHAP. V.

Concerning the first Founder of the Yearly Folkmote of the Kalends of May.

DEFORE I proceed any further, I must clear one point: and that is, that we find the author and founder of our yearly Folkmote mentioned in the laws of EDWARD the Confession. (which were recited and confirmed by K. WIL-LIAM I.) under the title de greve, chap. xxxv. which may poffibly leave a fufpicion, that this vearly Folkmote of the Kalends of May was a greve's court. Now what court fhould this be belonging to a greve, or any count or viscount, or prefident whatfoever; for greve is an ambiguous word? It is not a Burghmote, for that is three times a year by the Saxon laws. It is not a county-court; for that, by EDWARD the fenior's laws, N. 11. was in these words *: " I will that each " greve have a gemot at about four weeks." So that there were twelve in the year. It was not the sheriff's turn, or le turne del vicount; for that

* Ic pille j æle zenera hæbbe zemos a ýmb peaben jucan.

was

was twice a year, tpa reingemot on zen, by the laws of King EDGAR, cap. v. it is not the gemot for the view of weapons or arms, which every freeman in England was charged with, and was bound to fhew once every year, and, as was wifely contrived, all in one day throughout all England; but that day was not in our kalends of May, but the morrow after Candlemafs, *Craftino Purificationis B. M.* And therefore I cannot, for my life, make any thing elfe of an univerfal anniverfary full Folkmote, which is but *femel in anna*, *fcilicet in capite kel. Maii*, but a flationary parliament: effective confidering who they were, and what they did.

THE next thing to be confidered, is the author or founder of this antient conflictution, which we have in the aforefaid chap. *de greve*, num. 35. amongsit the laws of good King EDWARD*.

" THIS law of the anniverfary Folkmote AR-" THUR invented, who was heretofore the most " renowned King of the Britons, and thereby he

* Hanc legem invenit Arthurus, qui quondam fuit inclytistimus Rex Brytonum, & ita consolidavit & consæderavit regnum Britanniae universum semper in unum.

" confolidated

" confolidated and confederated together the " whole realm of Britany for ever as one,"

It is good to honour the founders of all useful conftitutions; and I believe that King ARTHUR was the inventor of this as to this realm, because these laws of King EDWARD fay fo: and fo was CADMUS, the inventor of letters in Greece, though we can trace them out of Phoenicia: and the letters speak for themselves. For if it be Aleph. Beth, Gimel, Daleth in one place, and in the fame order it is Alpha, Beta, Gamma, Delta in the other place; then we are fure there has been an understanding and communication. For it is impoffible to be otherwife, when the alphabets are fettled on both fides, by being their numeral letters; as it was plainly in King DAVID's time by the octonaries of the 119th Pfalm, as it stands in the middle of the Bible; and as it was in Ho-MER's time in Greece: or elfe the old fcholiafts have deceived me, who fay that HOMER purpofely couched the number of all his books in the first words of his Iliads M 5 VIV deld's Sed; which numerals stand for 48. The Greeks likewife taught the Welch to tell twenty, and I believe they taught the Romans too. Now by the fame rule, if there was a very antient Folkmote in the neighbouring 0 0

neighbouring kingdom of France upon every kalends of May, then, perhaps, King ARTHUR borrowed from them; and it is good to look upon their kalends, becaufe it is poffible they may give light to our's.

THE French kalends of May lie thus in RADUL-PHUS DE DICETO, the famous dean of St. Paul's in K. JOHN'S time, whose history was thought fo authentic, that the English parliament, in EDWARD the first's time, relied upon his testimony, amongst fome others, in no less a point than the claim of the King of England to the supreme dominion of the realm of Scotland *.

I WILL render the fenfe of it into English as near as I can; however, the Latin lies before every man to translate it for himfelf. "From

* As to our prefent business, he has these words, abbreviat. chronicorum, page 439. Abhinc Francorum regibus # solita fortitudine & scientia degenerantibus, regni potentia disponebatur per majores domus, regibus solo nomine regnantibus quibus moris erat principari quidem secundum genus, & nil agere vel disponere praeterquam irrationabiliter edere & bibere domique morari, & kal. Maii prassidere coram tota gente & salutari, obscquia & dona accipere & rependere, & sic secum usque ad alium Maium permanere.

" hence-

" hence-forward the French Kings degenerating from the valour and learning which they ufed to have, the power of the kingdom was adminiftered by the mafters of the palace, the Kings themfelves being upon the matter only titular; whofe cuftom it was to come to the crown indeed, according to their defcent, and neither to act nor order any thing, but to eat and drink unconfcionably, and to live at home; and upon the kalends of May to prefide in an affembly of the whole nation, and there to be addreffed, to receive their allegiances, and aids or benevolences, and to remercy them, and fo to retire to the fame life again till another May came."

THIS French kalends of May, is fo much a picture of our's, that I know not which is the copy, nor which the original. Their's was an affembly of the whole nation, fo was our's: annual and anniverfary, fo was our's. It was tota gens kal. Maii, in France: our Folkmote looks extremely like it in those two strokes; Statutum est enim quod ibi debent populi omnes, & gentes univerfæ fingulis annis, femel in anno fcilicet convenire, fcilicet in capite kal. Maii*. For it was appointed

* L. L. Edw. Conf. cap. 35. de Greve.

283

b₹

Digitized by GOOGLE

384 AN ESSAY, &c.

by flatute, that all the people and counties, univerfal, should meet together at the Folkmote each year, namely, once in the year, to wit, in the beginning of the kalends of May. The King used to have fine speeches made to him in France : to had we. They fwore allegiance to him; fo did our Folk. They gave him gifts. (it was not New-year's-tide) aids, benevolences, call them what you will; and our people at the fame time. as Sir HENRY SPELMAN faid above, confulted of seace and war: which cannot be managed without ways and means of raising money, which is the finew of war, as laws are of the peace. The word revendere at last in the French kalends looks fo like our French form of the royal affent given to a money-bill, le Roi remercie ses loyal sujects, that I knew not how to render the word rependere any otherwife than I did, by the word remercie.

I KNOW that the year 662 was below King ARTHUR'S time; but it appears, that when the French government was utterly fpoiled in the Merovingian family, as to the other points, ftill they retained the old cuftom of the kalends of May; fo that it was of much greater ftanding.

INI

S.

Loogle





Digitized by Google

•

•

,

•

Digitized by Google

.

.

Digitized by Google

.

÷



Biblioteca de Catalunya F34-8 259 8^a Biblioteca de Catalunya Diputació de Barcelona 534.083 (42) 342

300gl

gitized by 🕻

DE CATAI

1001943078

BIBLIOTE

